Diary of an Exorcist

by Win Worley

Preface

This book is not intended to be a theological treatise. Although I have had some theological training, I do not lay claim to being a theologian. I did not learn the work I am doing in any one of the several schools I attended. This is not to be understood as the last word on the subject matter covered, or even as an exhaustive treatment of it. What follows is a series of events, recorded with conclusions and deductions drawn from experience and Scripture. Hopefully, it will embolden timid believers in the Lord Jesus Christ to explore their birthright as soldiers of the cross and begin to take the offensive against Satan. Too long the churches of Jesus Christ have quailed in fear and ignorance before the devil and his army of demons.

Before rejecting the material as too controversial, try it and prove it true as I have. "Prove all things; hold fast to that which is good" (I Thessalonians 5:21). Search the Scriptures, then launch out on faith and attempt an attack on Satan and his forces. When Scripture is confirmed with experience, you have reality in action. Theory and theological pontification are worthless if they will not work in practical experience. Much that has been written about demons comes under the heading of wild speculation with no shred of evidence or experience to back it up.

I have deliberately omitted names of individuals in the accounts of deliverance so as to focus attention on the Deliverer, the Lord Jesus. He alone is worthy to receive honor, glory and praise (Revelation 5:12). The events and conversations are all true. I have omitted some details of vulgarity and obscenity which I felt would have added nothing to the narrative.

Oh, that God would in these last days raise up a mighty army to storm the enemy citadels and loose the captives in Jesus' mighty Name! A demon who was forced to reveal his presence in a victim recently made the bitter statement, "You

stupid mortal fools, you have no idea how much power is available for you. You are so ignorant that you do not yet know how to use it effectively against us." Oh, that we would become students of the Word of God and seek to know how to unleash this matchless power against the forces of Satan!

I must heartily agree with Robert Peterson, missionary to Borneo. He states, "Knowing demonic activity from experience is important, for this affords much confirmation of the Scriptures... The Old Testament deals with demonic activity in many of its aspects. Christ regarded demonism as a stern reality. The writers of the Epistles spared not in their exposure of these evil forces." [1]

The diary that follows includes only brief excerpts of what actually took place. I have stressed dealings with demons because that is the subject of this book. However, a great many were saved, healed and helped spiritually during these days also.

Lest I should be accused of a lack of balance in my overall approach to the Christian ministry, let me state clearly that deliverance is only one phase of the Gospel. The emphasis on deliverance in these pages is strictly deliberate. Many people who read this will already understand how to lead people to salvation in Christ; many will know of the healing ministry as well.

The wise reader will ask whether other facets of essential truth are being taught and ministered within our church. I will answer that the cornerstone and foundation of ministry is always soul-winning and evangelism. Yet this is only the beginning. After they are born again, the Word must be taught to the babes in Christ. They may also need to have evil spirits dealt with. Deliverance from such spirits is not automatic at conversion, but they are to be cast out. In the chronology of Mark 16:15-18, the progression is: salvation, baptism in water, casting out evil spirits, speaking in tongues, and then healings.

In our day it seems that, in most cases, deliverance is either omitted entirely or, at best, passed over lightly. I do not condemn the practice, nor negate the help people have received in spite of the significant omission, I only question the lack of full scriptural order. As Jesus told the Pharisees in reference to other matters, "These things ye ought to have done and not left the other undone" (Matthew 23:23).

Persons may have demons without being aware of their presence. They may have come from many sources: inherited familial curses; individual contact with the occult (seriously or in fun, intentional or unintentional) or occult involvement by members of one's family-this can stretch back three or four generations or any lowering of the "hedges" God sets about the mind (Job 1:10, Ecclesiastes 10:8). Drugs can lower the hedges, as does any wilful, persistent sin. These hedges are a bulwark provided by God to prevent damage to the unprotected human mind against the very real dangers of the spirit world. There is reason to believe that wilful sin blocks the efforts of our guardian angels to protect us.

Evil spirits, constituting a fifth column of treachery hidden deep within, need to be ferreted out and forced to leave in the Name of Jesus Christ. The weapons of our spiritual arsenal are definitely superior to those of the enemy arrayed against us. At the same time it would be the vainest type of foolishness to spend all our time "demon-hunting"-becoming morbidly obsessed and introspective.

God is infinitely fair. After we become aware of demonic realities and deal honestly with the spirits which are revealed, the Lord will definitely expose the others, forcing the alien spirits to betray their presence, so that His victory may be seen. In His own timing and leadership there is balance and sanity, with provision for growth, recuperation, and strengthening as well.

Let me add that I am fully aware of the semantic and theological arguments against using the term "exorcism" and

"exorcist," in connection with the casting out of demons. This book, however, is not written for theologians or semantics experts, but for believers seeking to implement the victory over Satan that Jesus Christ provided by His work on the cross. For this reason I have used the terms "exorcist" and "exorcism" in the popular sense, to convey to the general reader the idea of casting out evil spirits. You will quickly find, as you read the record of what has transpired in Hegewisch Baptist Church, that we believe in casting out demons only in the name of Jesus Christ the Son of God, and by the power of His blood.

Win Worley

[1](From Are Demons for Real? by Robert Peterson, copyright 1968, Overseas Missionary Fellowship, Moody Press, Chicago, Ill. Used by Permission. p. 13.)

Part 1

The Diary of an Exorcist

Introduction to the Diary

In the diary section of this book, I have tried to provide a synopsis of the remarkable deliverances in which our church and ministry were involved with the outpouring of revival fires. I wrote hurriedly, scantily, snatching moments when I could find them. I taught school full time and pastored simultaneously at the time of the outpouring of the Holy Spirit recorded in the diary.

My hope is that reading this will encourage some to believe God for great things. Pastors, do not wait until you have trained workers, adequate facilities or plenty of time. Plunge in aggressively, trusting the Lord and launch an all-out attack on the devil.

Pastors today are searching for some gimmick or program which will interest and enlist young people in their services. Arm your people with the Word of God, lead the way in attacking the devil, and young people will flock in and join God's work. Not only will they come, but they will study the Word, clean up their lives and become a witness to others. Coke parties and ice cream socials cannot compare to a demon fight when it comes to attracting the young people. Try it and see.

In the latter section of the diary, the accounts are briefer and more condensed. This is not due to a slackening of manifestations and deliverances, only that my time was more and more limited. I tried also to note only the newer and more bizarre things which occurred.

Scripture quotations are from the King James Version of the Bible unless noted otherwise.

Romans 13:12-"The night is far spent, the day is at hand, let us therefore cast off the works of darkness and let us put on the armour of light."

January, 1973

The phone rang insistently. Sleepily I looked at the luminous dial on the clock-radio as I reached for the receiver. One-thirty in the morning. I had been asleep about twenty minutes.

When I spoke into the phone, a woman's voice, near hysteria, came to me. Frantically she sobbed, "They've come back, O my God, they've come back! O please help me!" Despair and terror mingled in her voice with a throbbing urgency.

I was instantly wide awake and prayed for wisdom from the Lord. Peace and assurance poured out from on high and I relaxed in the knowledge of His provision for the need. The caller was one who had been delivered of many foul spirits at the church two nights before.

She was calling long-distance from another state. I began questioning her to determine the exact nature of the attack. Apprised of the situation, I sternly rebuked the demons and took authority over them in the Name of Jesus, commanding them to leave her immediately. They began to come out, but it took an hour to get them all. They had attacked her as she slept and now they left her reluctantly, as evidenced by coughing, retching, moaning, shrieking, growling and roaring.

When she began to overflow with praise to the Lord Jesus, thanking Him over and over, I knew the work was done. Months have gone by since then and there has been no recurrence of the attack. I sank back into bed, exhausted

from the battle. Again I marveled that more people had not entered this fierce conflict.

How did it all begin? Where did it start? We are orthodox, fundamental, Bible-believing Christians of a Baptist persuasion. Almost without warning we were brought into what seemed a wild and dangerous situation on a collision course with demonism and the shadowy realm of evil spirits. It was like being on a roller coaster, clicking lazily along to the top of the highest point and then suddenly having the bottom drop out! We found ourselves rocketing headlong into the unknown.

December, 1970

"Haven't I met you before? Haven't our paths crossed me from flaming eyes, hissing his hatred. Through clenched before?" I queried the strangely familiar spirit who glared at teeth he answered, "Ten, fifteen, twenty, twenty-four times!" With this he leaped at me, teeth snapping, and just missed clamping me in a vicious bite. "I hate you, Win Worley, and someday I will surely kill you." After this, he went into a paroxysm of rage, struggling to reach me in an effort to claw or bite.

There was no doubting the sincerity of his hatred or the sudden surge of supernatural strength which bolted through the body of the ex-Marine, whom we now held pinned on the floor. Biting, clawing, kicking like a wild animal, with screams of fury and rage echoing through the room, it was like a scene from a nightmare. The two of us could scarcely hold him fast. We prayed fervently for strength and asked the Lord to weaken the vicious thing we had cornered.

It would be six weary hours before this struggle would climax by a spectacular departure of the last of a host of demons, but we were unaware of this as we plunged into

unknown territory. In spite of the strangeness of the situation, I felt a deep peace and confidence that the Lord would lead us to victory. God had broken my heart earlier for the young Christian's bondage and led me to pray with him in the home where he was visiting. After a long session of confession and renunciation (of occult involvement and other hindering sins), the demon had suddenly surfaced and charged us furiously.

Almost immediately I sensed that I was in the beginning of something for which I had been destined by God. Yet it all seemed so unreal, in the upstairs bedroom of a home. Here at last was the demonic reality of which I had read in the Bible and the testimonies of missionaries.

In more than twenty-three years in Southern Baptist pastorates I had only brushed briefly with the powers of darkness directly. On several occasions I had rebuked Satan and commanded him to release the mind of a person seeking vainly to accept Christ. I had known the truth of 2.Corinthians 4:3, 4: "If our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost, in whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them that believe not" lest they see and believe. [This supernatural blindness over the unsaved must be broken before they can believe, broken by superior supernatural power.] This approach had always been successful, but it was child's play compared to this direct confrontation.

Although momentary fear hit me as the demon's hatred and murderous rage became apparent, it was quickly replaced by expectancy and exuberence over the Lordship of Christ in every situation. We had tracked the lion to his lair and the beast now fought, contesting our right to invade his preserve.

I stared into the eyes of the young man and the demon glared back, blazing defiance and rage. His face had gone

white and twisted so that it scarcely appeared human. When we proceeded, insisting and praying in Jesus' name for the demon's defeat, he began to roar with unbelievable volume.

The wife of the house, frightened by the commotion, gathered her five children downstairs to pray and sing hymns about the blood of Jesus. None of us had ever heard such continuous screaming or seen such fighting strength. Although I weigh 250 pounds and another man was helping to restrain the demonized boy, we were barely able to hold him when the demon made determined efforts to break free. He would periodically lunge and jerk with superhuman strength, attempting to come up off the floor, lifting us up with him. Shrieks and threats, punctuated with obscenities and bitter profanity, were directed toward us and toward the one he held prisoner. He stated flatly that he would kill rather than release him.

We continued pressing the demon to release the boy. Finally, in rage and anger, the evil spirits began to spew from his mouth, naming themselves and expressing their loathsome character by coughing, gagging, retching, etc. Each seemed determined to inflict physical pain on the young man as he left. We asked the Lord to protect him as his body jerked convulsively in the torment they caused.

The chief demon, superior in power and authority to the others, ordered an evacuation of all lower-ranked demons. This caused great arguments and complaints, communicated to us through the victim. The arguments were wasted, for however much a demon resents and resists authority, he must obey an order from a superior. The demons, slowly and sullenly, "surfaced" and left with more sobbing, whining, etc.

The plan was to deceive us with an appearance of freedom while the chief demon remained lodged inside. Later, he would open the door for all the others to return.

Fortunately, the young man was able to "hear" the plans of the enemy and warn us. During this lull in the battle, the victim jerked from head to toe, uncontrollably. When he told us of the enemy plans the demon charged again, seizing control of the body and "submerging" the man completely. We joined battle again, more tired than we could ever remember, sapped by the physical, mental and spiritual exertion. The one remaining demon, after prayer had routed many more, assured us that under no circumstances would he leave. He boasted of his high rank and power and claimed to have held control for many years. We kept insisting that he come out in the name of Jesus.

The demon grew weary under the constant pressure and became hysterical with rage. He snarled at me, "I'm going to get up from here, run through that door, down the stairs and into the street. Then I will rip off all his clothes and scream and pitch fits until they come and lock him up, and then you'll never get me, Win Worley! You'll never get me! O, I hate you, how I hate you!"

With this explosion of anger, animal-like sounds erupted as he thrashed around and began to lift himself up from the floor. He actually came up, lifting myself and the other man with him, and struggled to his feet with both of us holding him. He fought like a madman and had I not blocked the door with my body, he might well have carried out his threat. We called on Jesus and God answered with supernatural strength enabling us to force the demon back on the floor again. Mere physical force is insufficient in these cases.

When we had him on the carpet again, arms and legs securely pinioned to prevent injuries to the boy and ourselves, the young man "surfaced" again while his body twitched from head to toe. It was as if electric shocks were coursing through his muscles. He wept in fear, saying that the demon had sworn to kill rather than to release him. The

young man was growing noticeably weaker so again we prayed, asking God to bind the demon and protect and strengthen the boy through the ordeal.

When the demon would call off the battle to rest we could talk with the victim. The spasms of jerking were the only evidence of the battle apart from the utter fatigue we shared.

The young man was taking a terrible beating, but said he preferred death rather than to continue living under bondage to the evil spirit. He wept and asked forgiveness for the foulness that the demon had displayed, fearing we would think he himself was attacking us. We assured him we understood and that he need not worry, embracing him in token of our love and concern.

He suddenly stiffened. "Look out," he warned, "he's praying to Satan for reinforcements." Almost immediately the demon seized control and the boy blanked out. The demon lunged at me, determined to bite, eyes blazing. I failed to dodge and he clamped his teeth tighly on my forearm. There was no mistaking the triumphant gleam in the mocking eyes. He intended to slowly, painfully chew a chunk out of my arm and I must either submit or hit the young man's body. I could not add to the victim's torment so I asked the Lord for grace to bear the bite. Love for him, a deep compassion, welled up in me. The Lord instructed me to speak to the demon calmly, "Go ahead and bite a piece out of my arm. I love this fellow and you'll be biting into love, God's love for him. Bite harder so you'll get blood. Remember the blood of Jesus which cleanses from all sin?" With a savage roar of disgust he let go and spat repeatedly with much retching and gagging. "No, no, you can't love him, he's no good, he's no good. I'm going to kill him!" I was left with teeth marks, bruises and a valuable lesson in how to stop demons from biting.

We pressed our advantage, having learned the repugnance with which demons regard genuine love and compassion.

toward a bound and helpless individual. The Lord taught us that love is a weapon in the warfare with Satan. It is indispensable and will break demons at times when all else fails. Demons are incapable of receiving or understanding love and they cannot cope with it.

A person filled with the Holy Spirit who allows the love of Jesus to flow through him can cause the demons to be in torment by embracing the bound individual and letting that holy love flow through them both. Evil spirits invariably react with hatred, disgust, rage and revulsion, often screaming. sobbing and begging to be left alone. We have witnessed cases where demons seemingly impervious to spiritual pressure were burned out and forced to leave when love was applied.

When I drove home that night I could not remember ever having been so completely exhausted in my entire life I was sore from head to toe and every muscle ached. I had prayed and counselled with the young man for over three hours prior to the active manifestation of the demons. It was nearly six hours after that before the last one, screaming defiance and hatred, had tried to rip out the inside of the boy's throat as he left.

I tumbled into bed and was in a deep sleep almost immediately. During my four hours sleep I had a frighteningly real nightmare. It seemed as though four black globs landed on my chest, then melted and sank into my body.

The next morning I felt so heavy and tired that I could scarcely sit up on the bed. I thought to myself, "Boy, am I tired! More tired than I thought." I took a shower, shaved and left for the school where I taught. I thought that once I got moving I would feel better; however, I seemed to get worse as the day wore on. I am not the delicate type, and was

accustomed to losing sleep and going on. These symptoms, therefore, were puzzling.

I could not seem to break free from that clinging weight of weariness. The feeling grew that something was drastically wrong. I began to experience dizzy spells and felt a cloying pressure from some kind of evil presence.

I went on teaching my school class, trying to ignore these odd sensations. As the students worked at their desks, I almost fainted at my chair several times. Somehow I had come under heavy Satanic attack due to the battle the night before. The realization of this came as a shock, yet I was very certain that this was indeed the source of the lightheadedness, sluggishness and heaviness I felt. I seemed to be weakening as the time went by. My arms felt as if they weighed fifty pounds apiece.

By the end of the second school period, I was convinced that my "nightmare" of the night before had been the real penetration of demons who had taken advantage of my exhausted state. There was a persistent attack on my consciousness and a constant pressure on me to collapse. Each time the attack stiffened the thought would come that I should go and lie down but this would be countered instantly by a firm voice warning me not to yield. I cannot explain the sense I felt of extreme danger were I to submit to the heaviness. It was not drowsiness, but something far more sinister. It was a real effort just to rise to my feet and walk.

The only respite from the constant pressure was to quietly take authority over Satan and rebuke him in the Name of Jesus, claiming the protection of the blood. The heavy brooding forces would then relax their pressures briefly, though they never left completely.

Due to split sessions at school, I was to leave at 1:00 p.m. Going to the phone during a free period, I called the home where the battle had taken place. I explained the situation,

asked for prayer and told them I would come there directly from school. I could feel the effects of prayer even as the enemy worked to intensify encroachment.

It seemed the day would never end, but as the last bell finally rang I breathed a sigh of relief and left, stumbling several times on the way to my car. By now my vision was affected. My eyes would blur out of focus momentarily. As I reached an interesection which led to the expressway, I stopped for a sign. Soft persuasive voices urged, *"Turn here, go to the expressway, it's much faster."* Another voice, more familiar, spoke calmly, *"No, it is dangerous there, you could have an accident. Besides, it is out of the way. Go straight ahead."* Again the note of warning that danger was very near.

As I moved into the intersection, I picked up speed to go straight ahead down the open road. There seemed to be something like a growl and hiss inside my head. Without warning, something seized the steering wheel and yanked it viciously towards the expressway, actually wrenching it from my grip momentarily. The car jerked and righted itself as I swerved back to my original course. Now I was coming up behind a slow vehicle and took my foot from the accelerator to slow down a bit. I heard a snickering chuckle and gasped as the accelerator pedal suddenly slammed itself to the floor. The car leaped forward and kicked into passing gear. Its speed shot up rapidly, overtaking the car ahead and heading for a crash. I slammed the brakes hard and immediately the accelerator returned to its normal position and the car resumed its normal functions.

I believe that this was the longest fifteen miles I ever drove. Drowsiness, a strange combination of lethargy and apathy, seemed to smother me at times. I would jerk up with a start to find the car weaving on the nearly deserted highway. I sang praises to the Lord and prayed, to hold off the blanket of darkness.

Finally, thankful to be alive, I eased the car in alongside the curb. The intensity of the attacks had redoubled as I closer to the house. I found it difficult to breathe and a heavy dread swept over me, with weakness and fatigue in each wave. I found it more and more difficult to keep my eyes focused as spots whirled before them.

A hissing insinuation came from somewhere within me, *"You can't move, you can't walk. You had better just sit here and rest. You don't want to get out and fall."* I did feel paralyzed and strangely detached from my body and the idea of a brief nap sounded quite inviting. The warning voice I had heard earlier prodded me sharply, *"Get out, you are here, you can make it, you must make it inside. It is dangerous to stay here, you are getting weaker, get out."* I dragged myself out of the car, my limbs feeling numb and clumsy. I could scarcely walk, but staggered drunkenly across the lawn to the front door.

My Christian friends saw me coming and flung the door open. I fell headlong into their waiting arms and they placed me, half-conscious, on the floor. My whole insides were churning and I was only vaguely conscious of people around me. A man, his wife and another young man began to pray me and the demons angrily manifested themselves, screaming and cursing. I felt drugged, half-awake, and listened in amazement at the screams of rage and obscenity pouring from my mouth and originating deep within. I felt my eyes blaze with hatred for some of my closest friends. It was nearly two hours later when the last of the evil spirits left. Four of them had indeed entered my body while I slept. We had learned another valuable lesson. Claim the full protection of the blood of Jesus after a battle with demons as well as during the actual conflict.

About a week after the deliverance of the young man, I knew that in the recesses of my being there was something

foreign that needed to go. For years I had had various problems which I recognized stemmed from something deep within. Vague and buried deep inside. shadowy, but nevertheless very real, now suddenly it all came together. Now I knew with a dread certainty what it was,

After I made up my mind to ask for prayer for deliverance, something kept nagging, "But you are the pastor, the spiritual leader, you cannot afford to admit that you have these things. You will destroy your influence." Pride protested that I should be able to handle it myself without involving these laymen. That quiet voice which had so often steadied me in times of turmoil and indecision, now spoke again. "You will lose nothing but your stubborn pride and independence and I cannot use that anyway." That decided it. I called the men and told them I would meet with them for special prayer the next morning.

I prayed, fasted, wept and prepared for what I assumed would be a terrible ordeal. I felt strangely irritable as the Christians gathered around me to pray. There were three demons present: a red one, Religion; a green one, Wounded Love; and a black one, Lust. After the young man named them, I felt a churning in my stomach and lower abdomen. The only way I could describe it is that it felt like my insides had turned into writhing, twisting snakes. After a season of prayer coupled with compassionate concern and commands that they leave me, I heard myself begin to sob and weep. Sobs and moans came from deep within me, somewhere below my throat. Suddenly my stomach seemed to convulse and rush to my throat, as if someone had placed a strong hand beneath it and was forcing it up. It felt as if something hot and sticky was jammed into my throat, causing me to choke and gasp for air. I began coughing convulsively, retching with great dry heaves all the while. I bent double with the racking convulsions of my stomach and chest. The

young man praying with me said, "There goes that red one of Religion." More explosions and weird convulsions of my stomach, more choking and coughing, then, "That takes care of the green one. Now you black one, in the Name of Jesus Christ, come out of him.

I felt a sudden stab of pain in my left side, just below the rib cage, causing me to cry out. My song leader, who was across the room, jumped and grabbed at his leg with a howl of pain. "Something just hit me," he said, rubbing his leg on the calf. The young man with me said, "It was that black one, he really whizzed out of Win. I never saw one like that before. He had wings like a bat and a forked tail with a sting. I never saw one with wings before." My song leader had a "charlie horse" on his leg.

I was tired, very tired, but felt a wondrous peace within. We praised the Lord and worshipped a while and then returned to our homes. There is now a quietness and peace, that only the delivered can experience, wonderful beyond words. You experience that second rest Jesus spoke of: "Come unto me, all ye that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly of heart, and ye shall find rest unto your souls" (Matthew 11:28, 29).

That night, after a shower, I glanced in the mirror and noticed a scar about two inches long, just under my rib on the left side. I touched it and the ridge of scar tissue was prominent, but not sensitive or tender. I walked into the bedroom where my wife was reading and asked her to look at it. She reached out, touched it, then remarked, "O, that's the scar from your operation." Then she frowned thoughtfully and questioningly added, "But you haven't had an operation." I laughed and replied, "O, but I have, a most unusual operation," and I told her what had happened. This astonishing souvenir of my deliverance stayed for over two

weeks and was seen by many. Then it vanished and left no trace.

December 6-14, 1970

So much has happened in the past eight days that it seems a year has passed by. Last night I slept six hours, a departure from my recent average of three hours a night. There simply has not been time for sleep. A real moving of the Holy Spirit has swept us straight back into the Book of Acts. People are being smitten of the Lord, unclean and wicked demon spirits are being cast out by the matchless Name of Jesus-and this is only the beginning! So much more lies ahead.

This moving of God is beyond anything I've ever known. We are in deep water, totally shut up to faith. We have no way to go but onward with the Lord of the harvest (the Holy Spirit, Luke 10:2). Showers of power and waves of glory have come upon our regular church meetings. Last Wednesday, prayer meeting began at 7:30 and ran two and one-half hours, and what a cleansing and purging of us all took place! In my twenty-three years of pastorates, large and small, I have never seen anything that even approached what we now experience.

Everywhere we go people are falling under the power of God. We have wrestled with a demonized person as long as seven hours non-stop. Two men, sent to us this past weekend, were not only saved, but delivered from dope and the filthiness of the flesh.

The parsonage was full of people Saturday night and beds were spread everywhere, a sort of wall-to-wall people. We are praying for the work God would have us to do for His glory in this area. Never have I had greater confidence in the Lord and more certainty of His love and plans for this tiny church.

In this past week the Lord has made plain to me why so many Christians are oppressed and powerless, unable to function efficiently for the Lord Jesus. Our experiences have clearly shown that these people can be helped by deliverance from demon spirits. Most fundamental Bible-teaching churches fail to distinguish between that which stems from the sin nature and that which is demonic; therefore, there is no effective help given.

The Roman Catholic man who came yesterday told me he had dreamed that someday he would find salvation and deliverance from his many problems. He had spent two years seeking such help in his own churches without success. God delivered him completely from depravity and bondage many would find hard to believe.

A serviceman came to church who had been gloriously saved two years ago in Vietnam. Christ had redeemed him, there on the battlelines, out of witchcraft and every kind of vile enslaving sin. At the moment of his conversion in the Orient, the Lord showed him our church and informed him that these were the people who had prayed for his salvation (the Lord had led us to pray week after week for the salvation of men in Vietnam by the direct intervention of the Holy Spirit).

In the vision, he was not shown the church's location or name. He was equally puzzled by the sight of a man in a fringed buckskin jacket with shoulder length blonde hair standing up front playing a guitar accompanied by a lady in a high-necked, long-sleeved, ankle-length dress (white, with purple flowers). He wondered if these people lived in pioneer days or at some other time. He also saw me baptize him in water, yet had never met me.

Two years later, all these things literally came to pass. He came to the church and, as he walked in, found some newly-saved Teen Challenge people ministering in song. There

stood the man in a buckskin jacket, long blonde hair and guitar, with the lady in a "granny" dress (purple flowers on a white background) singing at the front of the church. As you might imagine, he was surprised and thrilled, as was the church when he shared his story. A boy from Ohio, prayed for by a church in Chicago, saved in Vietnam by a God Who knows no limitations; now brought together to share what God had done.

January, 1971

A young man with whom we prayed for several hours seemed to gain relief after many demons manifested and a number left. We came downstairs about 11:00 p.m. and were talking quietly. An odd look came into his eyes and he bolted for the door and before we could stop him, he was gone. We rushed to follow but lost him in the alleys.

About an hour later he walked in, weary and disheveled. He said that a terrible fear had seized him and caused him to flee the house. He tried to stop or turn in an effort to return, but with no success. Unable to control his feet and legs, he kept glancing back, hoping we would follow and rescue him from this power that drove him on. He drew near the river and realized that the evil thing inside intended to throw him into the water. He called to the Lord for help and immediately fell sprawling on his face in the grass. The thing within urged him to get up, but he refused. He lay there, battling in prayer, asking God to intervene and save him from this spirit's power. Finally, it released him and he came back to the house.

For several months we have taken three and four carloads of young people from the Bible class to participate in the Saturday night services at Pacific Garden Mission in Chicago. One Saturday night I was left at the mission

awaiting my song leader who had driven someone home. I was witnessing to some servicemen in the Servicemen's Center and about 1:30 a.m. a young witch walked in. The Holy Spirit worked with me in a strange way, revealing to me details of her life and witchcraft. She was involved in some of the most depraved aspects of Satan worship, including the sacrifice of living infants at black masses. She wore a werewolf-head ring invested with strange occult powers. As I witnessed to her about the Lord Jesus, I was able to tell her that I thoroughly understood the darkness in which she was involved.

She tried to look at me, but kept dropping her eyes. Finally she gasped, "You really do know, don't you? But you couldn't know, only a select few know but you do, you really do know!" She grew nervous and agitated at the knowledge God had given me and was thoroughly upset as she left.

It was 3:00 a.m. Sunday when I finally dropped into bed. Suddenly the house went still with an unreal quiet I would learn signaled the approach of some demonic visitor. At the foot of my bed I saw, dimly outlined, a tall figure, man-like, but much larger. I was startled to feel currents of cold air moving around me (as if I had opened a refrigerator door). This was a messenger from Satan who began to speak; his soft, calm voice describing what he wanted to do for me. My knowledge of the supernatural and demonic would be expanded broadened as I became a warlock extraordinary. I would be given money, sex, fame, popularity and authority. I would *not have to stop preaching* but would "cease wasting my efforts in this insignificant place." Worthy of greater things, I would be given large churches with huge congregations. Absolutely anything my heart desired would be mine for the asking.

I listened in amazement to the Satanic visitor's sales pitch. My wife slept soundly and nothing disturbed the house,

though I was certainly wide awake! He went on, painting beautiful pictures of the success I would achieve with his help. I broke in and said flatly I was not interested in anything he had to offer. This did not deter the visitor, who merely chuckled and purred on, upping the offers as he described the marvelous future that lay ahead for me.

Hardly appreciative of his feeling that I would fall for his line, I broke in again, asking crossly, "And what must I do to obtain all these things?" "O, it is quite simple," he replied eagerly, "all you have to do is *to stop what you are doing now*. I knew at once that he referred to the casting out of demons, begun some weeks before. I answered with finality, "No way! Just forget it and go on your way. I want nothing from you and desire no dealings with you at all. I will continue to follow the Lord Jesus Christ and Him alone will I honor and serve."

Angered, the visitor dropped his honeyed tones of persuasiveness. His voice grew cold and harsh as he snarled, "You are a fool, Win Worley. I would have given you everything." Angry myself, I snapped back, "I told you I want nothing you are selling. I am not interested in any of your propositions. I want you to leave me now in the Name of the Lord Jesus. I'm tired and I have two services to preach today. I belong to the Lord Jesus and I always will. Now you leave me alone in the Name of Jesus Christ.

He became ugly and threatened, "You'll be sorry, you stupid fool. You're so crazy about that little church of yours. I'll show you, I'll rip it to shreds, and then where will you be with your noble ideas? You are a stupid fool." "Look," I said wearily, "I've told you it's no deal, now get out of here and leave me alone. As for the church, if she can't stand on the Word of God, let her rip!" He left in a storm of obscenities as I turned over and went to sleep.

Within about four weeks, seventeen of our thirty-five regulars left the church without warning. Since my family made five and another family eight of the remaining eighteen regulars, it did look serious. I just kept preaching, feeling that if the church (which had been organized in 1937) had to close, so be it. I knew that I would not bow to Satan and his hosts, no matter what happened.

March 4, 1971

Today I began to pray in a new language given by the Holy Spirit. I have been studying the Scriptures about speaking in tongues for nearly a month. At my request, a young man prayed for me some time ago and the prayer is answered. More people have been delivered of evil spirits in recent weeks.

May 11, 1971

We continue to experience refreshing from the presence of the Lord as the Holy Spirit leads us. The outpourings of blessings have continued since December and show no signs of slackening. One of our men went with me to a nearby coffee house. We met an 18-year-old fellow who had come off dope after his recent conversion but needed help. We took him to my home and explained how he could be free from the powers that had bound him and that still continued to oppress him. He was willing, even eager, to be cleansed and freed.

After leading him through renunciation and cleansing from the occult, he immediately began to experience great relief. We then moved to attack the binding spirits lurking inside his body, casting them out in Jesus' name. After they left in great numbers, we prayed for a filling and the baptism in the

Holy Spirit. This came in wonderful power and he shouted and praised the Lord for several hours before we took him home.

The next day the young man called, wanting to bring a 19-year-old friend to the house to get what he had received. I sensed another battle with evil spirits impending and telephoned to alert three prayer warriors.

We took the boys downstairs when they arrived, and found the new boy to be full of occult spirits. They began to leave with violent heaving, retching and coughing. The boy could feel the demons surging out of him and received relief throughout the deliverance. We next prayed for an infilling with the Holy Spirit and waves of power swept over us and him, and he burst out praising the Lord in a new language.

During this deliverance an odd thing occurred. One demon, who had fiercely resisted leaving, finally fled. As he did, my ten-year-old son, upstairs in the bath, screamed out in pain. I rushed upstairs to find him doubled up with a severe pain in his abdomen. I rebuked Satan in the name of Jesus and commanded the evil spirit to depart. It immediately left and all pain vanished.

Sunday night a man came for help. He had been unable to overcome a greedy spirit of lust and was discouraged and back-slidden. We gathered about him and demons began to manifest and leave. He was then filled with the Holy Spirit and began to praise the Lord in a new language. He stayed long at the altar, caught up in praise and thanksgiving for what God had done.

On Monday I received a phone call about a 13-year-old foster child afflicted with behavioral compulsions. His foster mother suspected they were demonic after visiting our services. At her request, I took the boy to a member's home where we began to pray and cast out demons. The boy

experienced great relief and blessing as they left him and he sang all the way home, praising the Lord.

May 17, 1971

On Friday, I met an adult worker at the Coffee House who became interested in deliverance as we talked. He came to our home and was delivered from many evil spirits, including nicotine and the craving for it. He was 30 years old and had been bound for many years. It was 1:30 in the morning before he was cleansed, many demons having been forced to flee. He told me of many young friends who needed the kind of help he had received.

On Saturday, at 7:45 a.m., the same man called. A 16-year-old girl, loaded with enough cocaine to keep her "high" for two days, was at his home. She heard from the man and his wife that help was possible. Now she wanted it.

One of our men came in to help and we alerted others to stand by, on call for prayer and help in the battle we believed was coming. When the couple arrived with the girl, she walked in, looked at me and said, "I've got demons. I don't want to sit and rap about it. They tell me you can get them out. Let's get on with it." The girl had been saved two years earlier but she lived with an immoral and wicked mother heavily involved in witchcraft. The girl herself had participated in all sorts of occultism and witchcraft before her salvation, including black masses where living babies were offered as bloody sacrifices to Satan. She had also been a prostitute.

I explained that the demons could be cast out if she were willing to renounce them but that it might be a painful ordeal. She answered that she did not care, life as it was now was not worth living. We sent the children outside to play and went downstairs. At first the demons refused to stir at

all. After repeated prayer and commands to leave they began to manifest themselves. They stirred restlessly, but the girl's mouth and eyes were clamped shut and there was a sullen refusal to open them or manifest further.

The Holy Spirit led me at that moment to speak to them in the new tongue I had been given only weeks before. I was surprised, having previously used this prayer language only privately. Nevertheless, I began to speak in tongues to the demon and he reacted instantly, as if to an electric shock, whirling over to gaze at me, eyes glazed with hatred and fear.

The tone of the tongue I used was stern and commanding. The demon began to scream, contorting the girl's face into a mask of fury. Shuddering convulsions racked her body from head to foot as screams such as scarcely seemed possible literally ripped from the girl's throat. Although she was a petite girl, weighing only 85 to 90 pounds, it demanded the efforts of five adults to restrain her from tearing her hair, clothing, face and ourselves. Biting, clawing, twisting and screeching, the screams were almost nonstop, reminding me of a stuck whistle. Where the breath came for such a prolonged effort I never knew. My wife hurried to close doors and windows and turn on the air conditioning. It sounded as though we were torturing the girl.

We placed calls to church members for assistance and soon two men arrived. By now the demons were furiously chattering in the same language I was speaking (tongues of men and angels- I Corinthians 13:11). Speaking in a language I did not understand, I carried on the strangest argument I had ever had, anger welling up as the words poured out. It was quite obvious that the demons knew exactly what was being said and were in violent disagreement, protesting and resisting furiously. These are some of the most violent, dangerous demons we have met to date.

The next step in the battle was a fighting retreat by the demons. They would bluster about their right to possess the girl even as we drove them relentlessly with the claims of Christ to her body, mind and spirit. As we pressed more determinedly against them they began to whimper, complain and seek a compromise whereby they might remain in the girl. They promised "to be good", "not to make any more trouble," etc. It was five and one-half hours later when they finally yielded and spewed violently from the girl.

Hordes poured out, demons of all kinds and descriptions. The wildest and strongest demon named himself Rosh, evidently a chief. Another declared himself to be Satan. He was accompanied by a palpable presence of evil that left with him. While not really Satan (the demons love to masquerade as their leader), he was a powerful and exceedingly evil spirit. As they left the girl's body, awful convulsive retchings and dry heaves threatened to tear her frail body apart. I asked if we should stop but she urged us to continue for she wanted to be completely delivered. When the battle was over, the Holy Spirit came in answer to prayer, bathing the exhausted girl in the love of Jesus and gave her a new prayer language. We were all filled with awe and worship by the power of our risen Lord.

At 11:30 p.m. that night I received a call that there was trouble at the home of a member. I went there and found thewife of the house behaving strangely. She had been under pressure all day while her husband assisted at the deliverance of the girl. I laid hands on her in prayer and a binding spirit leaped out, setting her free to praise the Lord Jesus. She was flooded with such love and gladness that she hugged everyone present, then ran and embraced each of her sleeping children. It was 2:30 a.m. when I finally climbed into my own bed, exhausted but happy. At 5:30 a.m. the Lord woke me up for a time of special fellowship with Him. He

told me that something very special was to happen at the church. With His promise in mind, I went happily and expectantly back to sleep.

When I entered the building that morning I noticed a certain elderly gentleman. He had been in an automobile accident two years before that had split his skull and left him with impaired hearing and near-total blindness. The Lord led me to inquire about his sight. The old gentleman replied that the wreck had severed an optic nerve and damaged others, causing blindness, swelling and pain in one eye. The other eye was affected also.

I asked if he would like me to pray that Jesus would heal his eye. He began to weep, saying that when he arose that morning the Lord had told him I would pray for the eye and it would be healed. This explained his early arrival at the church! As I anointed him with oil and prayed, the Holy Spirit revealed the presence of a demon spirit pinching the nerve and causing the problem. I rebuked him in the name of Jesus and he left, as did the pain. The swelling shrank and vanished before our eyes.

I prayed for his hearing to be restored as well. The Lord answered and the man was on his feet praising Jesus, tears streaming from eyes that now saw clearly and he now could also hear again. He testified to the healing in the service. At the close, two more people came for deliverance from evil spirits.

We came home and sat down for lunch about 1:30 p.m. The phone rang. One of the men was bringing a 16-year-old boy who needed help. When he arrived and we began to pray for him, the demons literally went wild, making it very hard to hold him. When we called for help, others from the church responded and soon five men and women were at the house to assist in the deliverance.

The girl who had been delivered the day before came in, aglow with the Holy Spirit. When the demons in the fellow saw her they went crazy, screaming and almost ripping loose from those who restrained the boy. "Get her away from me," the demon screamed, clearly frightened. Wild with frustration, the demon began to spit on everyone present, continuing non-stop for almost two hours. They spit with deadly accuracy and hit directly in the middle of the face unless it is dodged or blocked. The spittle is mixture of saliva and blood which flows from some endless supply. The only answer to such behavior is to praise the Lord and pass the towel. We battled the demon for four hours and although it was subdued, it did not leave the boy. This one will probably require fasting and prayer to dislodge.

May 19, 1971

On Monday night a man called, asking to bring three friends over for deliverance. We again phoned our prayer band to put them on standby. Two men arrived to help and about 9:00 p.m. the fellows needing help arrived. We prayed with them one at a time, stopping to rebuke demons who attacked one with dizziness and headaches. An attack on a worker's teeth and stomach that threatened to interrupt the deliverance ceased when rebuked in the Name of Jesus. The enemy often attempts to distract you from the main work. It was 2:30 a.m. when the men were finally free of demons. Agape love broke through the last barriers, setting the captives free. What a weapon in the hand of believers is that love, coupled with prayer! At 3:00 a.m. I tumbled exhausted into bed for three and a half hours sleep before work the next morning.

At 1:00 a.m. Thursday a man called about a 19-year-old Catholic boy, newly born-again and off drugs. They were

preparing to take him to the emergency room at the hospital. I asked them to bring him to my home first; fifteen minutes later, they arrived. The boy was in excruciating pain, white-faced and scarcely able to walk as he doubled over in severe cramps. He thought his trouble might be a ruptured hernia. I anointed him with oil, took authority over the spirits causing the pain and commanded them to leave in the Name of Jesus. They complied instantly and, to his amazement, the pain ceased. Although he had suffered all day long, growing progressively worse, he now gasped, "Like way out, man! the pain is gone."

We then led him in a renunciation of the occult and commanded the demons to manifest and leave. They immediaetly and angrily appeared fighting back by ripping at the young man with unbelievable pain as he retched violently. Having seen demons hold a person before, I knew they were hanging on somewhere in his body. He was almost fainting with pain as the powers of darkness fought against being cast out. He moaned and groaned in agony as the coughing and vomiting continued. The demons assured the boy and us they would kill him rather than free him. Feeling sorry for the victim, we offered to let up and cease pressing them. With teeth gritted against the terrible pain, he urged us to proceed.

Finally, we discovered what was happening. As the demons were forced by our commands to move from the depths of his body towards his mouth and expulsion, they would somehow grip the cords leading to his testicles. The more force exerted on them to come up, the tighter they pulled the testicles up against the boy's body, causing one of the most severe pains a male can experience. He was bathed in cold sweat, groaning and crying out in agony, almost fainting several times. We had to specifically rebuke the spirits who had clamped on to his genitals before he was freed of the

pain and suffering they inflicted. Finally they gave up and fled. After the young man was freed, I turned to another boy, "high" on LSD, and prayed for him. He should have kept "tripping" for hours, but the Lord brought him down without "a crash" in 15 minutes.

I turned to a 19-year-old. Counseling and prayer were required to bring him to the place of confidence and trust. Agape love flowed into him, overwhelming his doubts and fears. The prayer attack on the spirits caused them to resist stiffly, but eventually they too yielded to the authority of Jesus and were forced to leave.

After he was freed from Satan's bondage the boy was filled with the joy of the Lord. Asked if he wished to receive a new prayer language he eagerly agreed. It was 2:30 in the morning as we prayed and he received from the Lord a beautiful language. It flowed effortlessly as he literally became intoxicated with the Spirit of God.

The group left the house and I crawled into bed at 4:00 a.m. When I got up three hours later, I felt as though I had slept eight full hours. No trace of the night's fatigue remained. I must have slept at ninety miles an hour to feel so refreshed and rested. "They that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength, they shall mount up with wings as the eagles; they shall run and not be weary, they shall walk and not faint" (Isaiah 40:31). I experience this verse regularly.

The man who had brought the group told me he would return the next night with others who needed prayer. I had asked the Lord to give me an opportunity to help the mixed-up children of this generation and that opportunity has come like an avalanche. My wife began to speak in tongues today, and Sunday as we worked with a stricken boy my song leader's prayer tongue (long sought and desired) was given. It is no wonder the devil fights so doggedly to blind believers to the truths of the Spirit's work in and through

believer-priests. Our only answer to the skeptics is Come, taste and see that the Lord is gracious. Seek and you shall find! Yet I know that we are just at the beginning.

June 1, 1971

It has been a busy season. I haven't even found time to write this past week as the battle with the forces of evil rages, fierce and unabated. There have been only two days free from a pitched battle with the Satanic hosts. Most of the days and nights have been filled with continuous conflict with evil spirits. One is forced to wonder at times, where are the Lord's soldiers? With people coming for help from so many denominations, it is obvious that there are few places to seek help when demons are involved.

It is unnecessary to visit, advertise or run buses to attract people. When you are in the deliverance ministry they literally swarm in. How sad that there are so few in this sector of the war front, but praise God for the supernatural strength and the glorious victories He gives continually! I teach school full time and am getting so little sleep I am amazed that I am able to keep on going.

How hard it is to catalog the supernatural. There is something about the work of deliverance that must be experienced to be understood, even partially. When you tangle with the spirit world, everything can and does happen. This struggle has continued since December and gets rougher and more glorious all the time. Persons not involved in real spiritual warfare have no concept of the pressures and powers operating in this arena, both satanic and divine. I have stopped trying to explain. I hesitate to share some of our experiences for people will be certain I exaggerate! I was once told, "Never explain, your friends

don't need it and your enemies would not believe you anyway.

Today i am so sore I can hardly move, every muscle in my body has been pulled and strained. I feel as though I had been beaten from head to foot with a club following a hard fight with a demon of fear.

This is a holiday from school. We slept late and expected to enjoy a normal day, barbecuing hamburgers and relaxing. As we were about to eat lunch, a young lady called to let us know some of the fellows were heading our way, one severely oppressed. A demon had forced him to claw his face and beat himself with his fists the night before. I went immediately to the den and fell on my face in prayer, heavily burdened for him. When he arrived and came downstairs, I embraced him and he began to weep. As I started to pray the demon reacted instantly, snorting, writhing and struggling wildly to escape. "No, No, No, Leave him alone!" he shouted in protest, as I called for three other men waiting upstairs to come and assist me. By this time the demon was hitting me hard with clenched fists, kicking me and attempting to bite and claw my face and eyes.

My wife quickly phoned two other men, realizing we had encountered an exceedingly fierce demon. We found a number of vicious spirits present. Their chief, or ruler, was Fear and he had entered the man at the age of four and for fourteen years had made his life a hell on earth. He was extremely difficult, absolutely refusing to leave, and determined not to give up his "house." Soon the two other men arrived and we were glad to have their help, both spiritual and physical. Other members, alerted by phone, were enroute. After two hours of battle we were covered with sweat in spite of the air conditioned house.

The demon's strength was so great that a large man holding one leg was lifted from the floor at will continually

throughout the battle, which stretched into six hours. From time to time the fists would manage to tear loose from restraint and i was punched in the mouth and both eyes repeatedly.

Three people, unaware of what was happening, dropped by for a social call . Taken down to see the battle, they found the demon roaring like a cage full of lions. Although the man knew the boy quite well, he gazed in amazement at the bestial form writhing on the carpet, roaring and fighting furiously. "Who is it, Brother Worley?" he asked. I told him the boy's name and he blanched as he looked again. "Good Lord, it really is him!" Hours later the battle ended with the expulsion of the demon and his helpers.

September, 1971

The summer passed with so much activity and so many battles with Satan that there was no time to sit down and write. However, the lessons learned will be applied to future conflicts with the evil ones. Streams of visitors inundate the church and there is a wonderful outreach through tracts and by word of mouth.

Much denominational and pastoral jealousy has appeared and I have been the target of much malicious gossip and attack, including charges of hypnosis, and the Lord alone knows what else. The young people continue to flock in, however, responding to the ministry of love, compassion and deliverance from evil spirits. There is no denying its appeal to the "now" generation. At several services we have had up to twenty-five members of the street gangs come in to see what God is doing. Some have made professions of faith as our young people have witnessed of Christ as Saviour.

The Baptists and other fundamental brethren say I've gone off my theological rocker. Pentecostal friends come to this peculiar Baptist Church which speaks in tongues and casts out demons and go away saying we don't do it right! We must continue as we have begun, to follow our Lord one step at a time and take no thought for the consequences or people's reaction. The Lord's rule has been, "Freely ye have received, freely give" (Matthew 10:8). We are not to argue nor debate with those who do not accept or understand. That which we see and experience is the common legacy of all saints.

October 26, 1971

How can I describe the past week? We had meetings every night at the church and the Holy Spirit has been poured out like a river of blessing each service. Two Sundays ago the morning service ran from 9:30 a.m. until 1:15 p.m., and the evening service lasted well over three hours. It would take pages to describe just one of the services, to say nothing of the entire week!

Demons are being cast out in every service as God purges and prepares His people for yet greater things. Our people are moving deeper into the Word of God; fasting and praying for even greater outpourings of the Holy Spirit to come. Many denominations are represented by the visitors. We are even visited by Satan worshippers and witches! Repeatedly we have seen persons with unclean spirits cry out and collapse before being brought to the altar for deliverance in the name of Jesus. (Mark 1:23)

Last Thursday a woman in her fifties came for healing. Many spirits of infirmity were rebuked in the name of Jesus as she was anointed with oil. I learned later that she had all kinds of chronic maladies, including low blood sugar (Hypoglycemia), gall bladder trouble, arthritis and a number

of other physical complaints. As we prayed, she began to praise of all! (See testimony) the Lord for His healing power. And she was completely healed

A prophecy came some months ago: God was going to do a mighty work through this small church and only the choice vines were to be planted there. More recently, several persons visiting have brought messages of an impending revival.

Last night the blessings of the Lord fell again upon the church. As we were about to begin the preaching service, a young man sitting on the front pew was suddenly seized with choking and collapsed. The fellows on either side caught him and brought his limp body to the altar. As they did, the demon began to flail about and roars of anger and rage burst from restraining this powerful spirit. him. Others rushed forward and soon ten people were

After a prolonged battle, a number of evil spirits left. Next we prayed that he be filled with the Holy Spirit. He began to shout and praise Jesus, staggering drunkenly as the waves of love came over him. We resumed our places in church, surprised by the amount of time which had elapsed during the struggle. Suddenly, another boy in a different part of the building was seized, and was brought forward. These demons were vicious, biting, kicking, and screaming. The love of Jesus was sweeping throughout the church and we find that this puts pressure on the demons forcing them to manifest. The boy was delivered when the demons grew exhausted and were forced to flee.

About 9:30 we were still gathered at the altar, praising God for His love and power. Without warning, a young woman came running into the church, wild-eyed and disheveled. She had just attempted to kill her husband. Failing, she dashed from the house, leaped into her car and rushed to the church. She staggered up to the altar, weeping hysterically, and fell to

the floor. As one of the men began to deal with her about Jesus Christ, the enraged demon seized control and began to shriek, twisting on the floor in violent convulsions. A long battle with him and his friends ensued, but Jesus won again!

October 27, 1971

It is clearer all the time why people and churches do not have revival. The cost is too high. The preacher is turned back by discouragement and the desire for comfort before he reaches the real thing. We are moving closer now, still crying to the Lord to show us more of His love, compassion and power. We are fully aware of the fierce and determined Satanic opposition but the first prophetic message given in the church (July, 1971) promised that we could escape the binding of Satan if we would follow the Word. The message declared that the devil had desired to lock us in a vault and to seal it securely so we could never break out, but that God had overruled his plans and He Himself was breaking the bands of Satan to set us entirely free. We would enjoy a liberty that would be known and shared far and wide. This prophecy seems to be coming to pass.

Sunday night so many were being dealt with by our workers that I was unable to count them. I and the others were busy for hours, and in each case, as the Lord gave the help that was needed, the church echoed with shouts of praise and thanksgiving.

November 4, 1971

This has been a week of relitve quiet and rest after the last two weeks of October. There were eighteen consecutive meetings. It is hard to recall everything that occurred, so much happened at once. People were saved, healed and

delivered from all sorts of evil spirits in each service, none of which lasted less than three hours and some longer, one until 1:45 a.m. Praise Jesus Christ! He was victor in every case. One night thirty-five demons came out of a girl, another night forty-six left a man. On other nights so many came out we could only guess at their number. Demons raged, screamed, sobbed, complained. One I remember particularly wailed, "Why, Why, coughed, threatened murder and mayhem, pleaded and Why? It's been so nice here for these two years. She wanted me, now why does she turn on me like this?" We neither coerce nor pull strings to produce these results. It is entirely the work of the Holy Spirit Who draws people to the meetings. Then, in the atmosphere of love and yieldedness to Jesus Christ, the demons begin to stir and often cry out in the services. May God everywhere! cause this knowledge of spiritual warfare to spread

On Saturday night, two public school teachers, a man and his wife, came to the services, drawn by what I had told them of the deliverance ministry. It is strange that the lost will believe more readily than those who profess to know the Saviour. How sad! As in Jesus' day, the prepared people reject the truth while the the heathen believes. No wonder the command was to go into highways and hedges! (Luke 14:23).

I did not even get to preach in that service. A lady was singing a solo, when a 19-year-old leaped up and ran to the back. Several followed her, talking with her in the vestibule. When I walked up she almost fainted. She had been struggling wildly as a demon manifested. We brought her back to the altar and workers flocked around to help as the demon began to screech and curse savagely.

I asked my teacher friends to come forward to witness the manifestation of demon power. The man was soon helping to hold a leg down and the supernatural strength of the demon

shocked him. Later, when I talked quietly with the couple, both bowed their heads and asked Jesus to come into their hearts. The reality of the demonic forces in the girl had convinced them of their of their need of salvation. How wonderful are the ways of God!

November 15, 1971

How can I describe what is happening? Words alone cannot just closed a third week of holding services nightly. Three truly convey the mighty working of the Holy Spirit. We have weeks out of the last four we have gathered at the church, with people being saved, healed and delivered in every service.

Night after night there have been outpourings of power. So much happened simultaneously, but there was not a single demonic attack that failed to trigger from one to three conversions! It is marvelous to see the power of Christ manifested. We are all tired physically after these three weeks, but is is a happy weariness. The meetings lasted for two and a half hours, or more. On two Saturday nights I and some of the workers left the church at 4:00 or 5:00 a.m., slept three hours and returned to begin the Sunday morning services. Dealing with demons requires time and effort.

November 17, 1971

We fought with one particularly savage demon for hours. He claimed he had been in the girl since birth, having passed from her grandfather to her father to her. Unmasked as an occult spirit of witchcraft, he finally released his hold, remarking wearily, "Well, you stubborn people are just not going to give up, are you? I'll have to come out but I'm going

to curse this building. O, how I hate this church! And I especially hate you, preacher!"

Another demon gave his name as Six Six Six. He was a dangerous foe, calm and vicious. When I suggested that perhaps he held a low rank in Satan's army he sneered and replied, “Now preacher, you know more than that. If I were a low-ranked demon you people would have had me out of here long ago." He then turned persuasive. "Preacher, send your people home. I've been after you for a long time. Let's just you and me hassle this out alone." I declined. Later, he warned, "Pretty soon you and your people will need sleep. I don't need sleep. You'd better quit now." I refused, assuring the demon we would stay with the man until he was free.

This demon loved bloodshed, and said he had been involved in 4,000 different wars. He claimed he had developed the blitzkrieg and planted it in the minds of the German generals. At one point while talking to the young man, I called him son. The demon thought I referred to him and exploded in fury, hissing, "Don't you dare call *me* son! As the battle continued, he finally snapped, "Well, you crazy fools aren't going to stop, are you?" When assured we would not, he said he would have to leave. First, however, he promised to rip the boy's shoulder out of joint. Cackling fiendishly, he set to work. We were barely able to prevent this. After he left, the boy was so weak and sore that he could hardly sit up and experienced great difficulty walking. The next morning he was unable to get out of bed but he soon recovered.

We have seen a number of persons under severe demonic seizure at one time. Demons will often shout encouragement to one another. "Hang in there; don't let go; fight them; fight them." They know when people are coming to the church before they arrive and have often called out the exact time without seeing a watch or clock. If an unsaved person enters the building they know it without seeing the individual. They

know the facts about Jesus Christ and when pressured will reluctantly, grudgingly concede their truth. Demons know of Christ's imminent return and they fear it exceedingly, showing great terror when it is mentioned. They know their destination, and wish to avoid talking about it. Demons often speak of people whom they have bound over to the fires of hell. Occasionally we find certain blasphemous spirits who deny everytihing and insist that Satan will still win the battle with God.

November 22, 1971

Another wild and eventful week has passed. On Wednesday the power of God fell upon the prayer meeting, defeating the powers of darkness. During the Friday night services, conflict with the enemy erupted during the invitation. It was 11:30 p.m. when we finally left, praising Jesus Christ for again vanquishing the foe. The battle truly is the Lord's!

A number of people received prayer languages this past week. Others were saved, many were delivered from evil spirits and strengthened in the Lord. The love of Jesus is continually poured out on the congregation as we rejoice in the unchanging Word of God. Both telephone and doorbell ring constantly and services are crowded as more and more people seek help. Yesterday, (Sunday) it was 3:00 p.m. before the last person was delivered.

We bought hamburgers for lunch and arrived home just as the phone rang. Someone needed help. After a short rest we headed for a home, then later to the church services. Two witches entered the service and induced a demonic seizure in a boy with a badly injured eye. As I preached on the book of Jude the witches rushed out, very frightened and upset. When the invitation was given people surged down the aisle. Soon demons were screaming, cursing and arguing. One was

saved during the battle and later was delivered. We left for home rejoicing at 11:30 p.m.

January 20, 1972

Strange and beautiful things continue to happen as we follow the leading of the Holy Spirit. In the past week we have opened the church for preaching each night. At the close we pray for the sick and those desiring deliverance. Monday night we encountered a particularly obstinate demonic foe. Strong and powerful, he had entered the young man at the age of eight. He flatly refused to leave and boasted of his power, claiming we could do nothing to effect the boy's deliverance. After battling for two hours we were forced to stop because the fellow had to return home. Last night however he returned, desperate to be free. The spirit had nagged him throughout the day, threatening to kill him rather than free him. He promised death if the boy returned to the church and then attempted to bribe him not to go there.

After most of the people had gone, the boy came for prayer. God had led me to fast and pray the day before and I felt that victory over the unclean spirit was assured. When I challenged the demon, he immediately seized control and answered me in a deep guttural voice angrily rattling on in a strange tongue. commanded him to speak in English. He sullenly complied, blurting out in heavily accented tones, "Kaah no come out!" He chanted this over and over, gritting his teeth.

As we continued to press him with prayer and Scripture, he began to weaken and at last, to scream. At last he began to sob and weep bitterly, begging us not to cast him out. After continued resistance, the body twisted in awful convulsive coughs and retching as the demons did their worst before

departing. Discernment revealed yet another spirit hidden inside. The foul thing finally surfaced, naming himself Persecution. He had entered the boy in grade school. Because he was Jewish, other students had taunted him about his nationality.

As the spiritual pressure mounted the evil spirit screamed and wept, begging us not to send him to the pit. He pleaded for mercy, but found none. It was wonderful to see the peace and joy in the boy when, after clawing and screaming, the spirit left. His throat was scratched raw by enemy, but he was free. Praise the wonderful name of Jesus Christ!

February 28, 1972

It has been some time since I last stopped to record what God is doing. He continues to bless in every service. We are meeting regularly four times a week now, on Wednesday, Friday and twice on Sunday. On Tuesday nights I teach a home Bible class for young people. People are saved, healed, delivered, filled and baptized in the Holy Spirit in every service.

Our congregation now is largely made up of older teens who have heard that our church is "where it's happening." Last night was typical as the kids streamed in, filling the building. I tried to close the service four or five times but each time shouts of rejoicing would begin to ring out over victories won in someone's life. The service lasted nearly four hours and songs of praise echoed in the parking lot as we began to leave.

We have no gimmicks, pull no strings, do not try to make things happen. Such action is cheap sensationalism, beneath the dignity of the Lord Jesus. We sing, testify, and preach the simple Word of God without apology or compromise, then invite people to accept Jesus as Saviour and to seek

whatever help they feel is needed. In each service it seems as if no one will come. I tell the Lord, "If you want us to go home now rejoicing over over what you have already done in this service, that's fine." We refuse to use pressure to bring people forward, but soon one comes, then another, then the front of the church is crowded with seekers and workers.

It is indeed the Lord's doing and it is marvelous in our eyes (Psalm 118:23). The Holy Spirit directs the entire ministry as Spirit-filled believers witness to the lost or gather in prayer around those seeking help and healing. Periodically, shouts of joy and praise rise from those who win victories over the evil one and many begin to praise the Lord in a new language for the first time. Usually shrieks and screams from demons will begin as the beleaguered spirits attempt to escape the name of Jesus, appealing to Satan to send reinforcements. However, God establishes a wall of angels to protect his people when they meet (Hebrews 1:14).

March 20, 1972

From one to three persons continue to be saved in each service. New converts are bringing their friends to be born again and baptized in the Holy Spirit. Five teens from a nearby Presbyterian church have been saved. Two Catholics were born again yesterday morning. Our people come to church aglow with anticipation, expecting each service to see God move in fresh and arresting ways. It is wonderful to see young people in their teens and twenties come, tired of formalism, ritual, programs and social gatherings.

March 29, 1972

Wednesday we experienced another outpouring. Three were saved and more spoke in heavenly languages for the

first time. Many were delivered from demon spirits before we left near midnight.

On Friday a demonized 22-year-old man was delivered and five people seeking new languages received them. Two accepted Christ in the service. Two others, saved since the last meeting, stood to give testimony.

Sunday a three-day-old Christian, fresh off of drugs, came for prayer. Many evil spirits were cast out; he was baptized int he Holy Spirit and spoke with new tongues. Sunday night many more came.

March 30, 1972

A wonderful Wednesday night! Among those who came for prayer was a Roman Catholic priest from Chicago. Two more girls were saved and prayer was requested for those young people saved and filled with the Holy Spirit at our church, who are now forbidden by their parents to attend.

One 17-year-old boy stated last week: "I've been into drugs and the whole occult scene, but when I came to this church I accepted Jesus Christ as Saviour. Then four services later I was baptized in the Holy Spirit and prayed in tongues. WOW! This is what I've been looking for all of my life." He is now forbidden to come to the church by parents who cannot understand the change in his life and his interest in the Bible.

April 17, 1972

On Wednesday night two legs were lengthened and two people asked Jesus into their hearts. Three were saved Friday night and two more legs lengthened. A man visiting the church received healing for an old shoulder and back injury and then was baptized in the Holy Spirit.

Nine legs were lengthened Sunday night. One was nearly three inches short. Surgery six months before had failed and doctors had pronounced it beyond correction. The Lord Jesus did the whole job, painlessly, in a matter of seconds. Experiencing this, the young man was eager to accept Christ as Saviour. Later, he was cleansed of many demon spirits and then was baptized in the Holy Spirit, praising the Lord in new tongues.

May 4, 1972

The Holy Spirit continues to glorify Jesus in our midst. Signs and wonders still follow those who believe! (Mark 16:18, Hebrews 2:4). We are amazed at the resistance and hatred people evidence upon hearing of the miraculous, possibly because it upsets their religious applecarts.

Friday night we saw more miracles of healing and deliverance in the name of Jesus Christ. God has honored the fasting and prayers of our people by straightening crooked legs, correcting pigeon toes, lengthening short legs, etc. Two toddlers in corrective shoes had ankle bones and feet straightened.

God works in the public schools, for in my class, nine short legs were lengthened one day. No one believed the children when they told of seeing legs grow. Such things just don't happen you know!

Sunday night many demons were again cast out. They screamed, sobbed, complained and begged for permission to stay. A lady who had flown in from Ohio received prayer and deliverance. Again it was nearly midnight when we closed the church and headed home.

October, 1972

There has been little time to write lately but God continues working among us. One of the men of the church was seized with a massive heart attack and rushed to the Cardiac Intensive Care section of the hospital. I found him resting, an oscilloscope registering his irregular heartbeats. When I greeted him he smiled and nodded. There were several other patients in the ward, so I spoke just above a whisper. "I take authority over every spirit of heart attack, heart failure and heart disease in this man, in the Name of Jesus, and I command that you leave him now and that he be made whole. In the Name of Jesus, leave!" The oscilliscope went wild; the green line tracing the heartbeats jumped all over the scope for about forty seconds, then quieted. The machine now registered a regular, rhythmic pattern, without the skips and misses which had been apparent earlier.

After I left, his specialist came. Puzzled by the sudden change in his patient's condition, he kept him for several days, trying to discover what had happened. After checking and rechecking he released the man, saying, "I know you had a massive heart attack. I can't explain it. There is no sign of heart damage although there definitely should be. Nothing shows up on any of the tests." he patient testified how the Lord had healed him.

November 2, 1972

A young college student came to my home, under deep oppression. He began to have trouble after he enrolled to study Karate. This Spirit-filled young man had been a faithful witness, studying his Bible and evidencing a deep devotion to the Lord. Now he found himself no longer able to pray or study his Bible and he experienced difficulties in

concentration. Subject to fits of moodiness and depression, pressured by recurrent temptations, he recognized all the symptoms of demonic subjection. Although he tried everything he knew, he had received no relief.

In the process of Karate training, he was required to practice various positions and meditation. [David Babcock. Third degree Black Belt Karate Instructor states, "Basically one has to eliminate the thinking process altogether and synchronize mind and body. . .You get a thirst for it."] Aware of the danger in meditation the boy would pray in tongues during these sessions. However, soon such prayer became impossible and the spirits of Zen meditation gained control.

After we cast out certain relatively minor spirits, the young man decided to bring his Green Belt certificate and ghi (karate garb) and burn them on our barbecue grill. After doing this, he felt great relief, and left for home. (See Appendix.)

It was 9:00 p.m. and I felt led of the Lord to go to a family gathering. A 25-year-old man, saved three months before at the church, queried me earnestly about evil spirits. He asked if I could discern any in him. Retiring to a bedroom I laid hands on him, rebuking spirits in Jesus' Name, commanding them to manifest and leave. As I began to pray in tongues, his breathing became heavier and moans and growls began to well up in his throat.

As I pressed the attack he stiffened and jerked away, falling across the bed. His teeth began to gnash and his head thrashed wildly, forcing me to pin his arms to keep him from striking himself or me.

Realizing that I had tripped into a powerful demon nest, I ceased prayer to permit the demons to subside. When he awful thoughts of rage, hate and even murder surged through returned to normal, the man began to weep. "O Pastor, these awful thougths of rage, hate and even murder

surged through me, and I kept thinking how I wanted to kill you with my bare hands." I assured him this was nothing but the manifestation of demonic hatred.

I got another man to help me and we resumed the battle. The demons immediately surfaced, cursing, shouting obscenities, screaming and roaring. They attempted to bite or harm us in any way possible and promised to destroy the man in whom they dwelt if we did not leave him alone. The evil spirits said they had been there since early childhood and under no circumstances would they leave now. Two and one-half hours later they did leave.

December 9, 1972

On Wednesday and Friday we again experienced the wonderful moving of the Holy Spirit. Services now last from three to five hours regularly with never a dull moment. Visitors have been awed as they witness and experience the waves of love the Lord pours out in the services. It is this love, flowing between believers and toward God which helps to send the demons into spasms of rage and hatred.

Sometimes the Lord gives us glimpses beyond the natural. Believers have reported seeing angels covering the walls and ceiling of the church, cutting off Satanic reinforcements for the demonic troops that are embattled and trapped inside. One demon, after repeated commands that he leave, made a remark about Satan lying about the resurrection. Asked if he was not afraid of Satan's anger, he laughed bitterly and said that Satan could not reach him while he was in the church. Asked why, he snarled, "Are you kidding? There are angels over us patrolling, on the sides and even under this damned floor. There's no way that Satan can break through that wall of angels protecting you stupid clods." He then snapped that our "fanaticism" made him sick.

Demons continually threaten to destroy the church by burning, explosions, storms, etc. I and the other workers are promised all sorts of accidents and violent death. A demon who claimed considerable expertise in arranging human torture and sacrifice assured me he would love to arrange to have me drawn and quartered. We have heard spirits praising Satan, praying to him, cursing us and our building in Satan's name. We drown them out with songs about Jesus, the cross and the blood. Some will cease speaking on command in the Name of Jesus, but many will only get louder and more profane.

Sunday morning there was a demonic seizure during the song service which could not be quieted. The person was carried to the altar and we gathered for prayer. Others came for help. It was 4:30 p.m. before we finished. The evening service began at 6:30 and ended six hours later. As I preached the sermon that night I could not help noticing a demon, in a lady, leering at me from the congregation. As the invitation began, I walked to the pew where she was sitting and she jerked back, wild-eyed, leaped on the pew and ran towards the wall. Young people brought the struggling, cursing, biting figure to the altar where prayer eventually defeated and drove out the evil spirits.

Two people were saved that morning and one that night. At one point three persons went into demonic seizures simultaneously. We finally left the building with tired but happy shouts that "Jesus is Lord" and "Victory in Jesus" echoing in the night air. We dealt with an epileptic spirit which vomited up a foul-smelling green liquid substance each time we prayed. It was not food materials and would cease when prayer was halted. The woman got some relief but we failed to dislodge the spirit.

Wednesday night a man came for prayer, seeking relief from a raging high fever. When we prayed a demon exploded

angrily, and put up quite a battle before he fled with a wailing shriek. The young man's temperature immediately returned to normal.

March 1, 1973

The battle grows fiercer by the hour, however the Lord remains faithful. A young wife came again for prayer last night. Satan had thoroughly wrecked her health and she had been under a doctor's care. Her husband encouraged her to come for prayer.

We first dealt with resentments which had been uncovered at her first deliverance. We then called on the demon to manifest himself. When asked his name I thought he answered, "Peanuts." What he really said was "Penis." We found him to be a chief in a nightmarish cluster of demons related to sexual lust. These had blocked the young woman from any normal marriage relationship

The spirits fought bitterly against leaving, screaming and cursing. At last only a ruler, Fear, was left and he boasted of his control over her. She was afraid of everything and everybody and twice he had driven her to the verge of a nervous breakdown. As the prayer barrage continued, the spirit grew uneasy, less sure of himself and his position. As the pressure mounted, he began to weep, then to shout: "You must not interfere, you must not force me to leave. I almost had her destroyed. In two weeks she will return to the hospital and then I will deal with the bitch in such a way that she will never be the same. She must go to the hospital, then I can drive her insane. I will not leave. No! No! No! you can't make me, you stupid mortal fools, don't you understand, you must not interfere. I'm so near now to having complete control of her. I've almost got her. Let me alone. I hate you, O, how I hate you damned mortals. You're ruining

everything." Finally, howling in rage and frustration, he came out in a horrible seizure of choking, gasping and retching, shrieking his hatred of us and of the Lord Jesus.

Such a change came over the woman. We found she had first come under the demonic power through occult experiments earlier in her life. Suicide, loneliness and despair were among the dozens of demons who had made a shamble of her life, aided and abetted by prescription tranquilizers. Now she began to weep softly and praise the Lord Jesus, lying on the floor where the demon had thrown her. Her face radiant with the joy of the Lord, she shouted, "I'm free, I'm free. For the first time in two and a half years, I'm really free and I'm Me again. O thank you Jesus, thank you Jesus!" She held her husband close, sobbing, "O honey, I'm free, I'm finally free, I love you, I love you."

I went to a thirty-year-old man, recently saved, and embraced him. He had had some deliverance earlier but I felt more was needed. Because he had studied Karate in the Marine Corps, I rebuked that spirit, Meditation and Eastern Religions, commanding them to manifest themselves and leave the man. Immediately he began to tremble (James 2:19) and animal-like growls rumbled in his throat. I quoted: "Wherefore, God also hath highly exalted Him, and given him a name which is above every name. That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth, And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God, the Father" (Philippians 2:9-11). I repeated it several times as the trembling became more violent and the noises grew louder. Four workers moved close to the man, ready to give assistance. None too soon, for in a few seconds he exploded with a roar of rage into a dynamo of flying fists, kicking feet and legs.

Eight men were required to drag him to the floor and pin him. The demons were furious, letting out choking, gurgling screams as they were forced to yield and leave the man. There were convulsions, retchings and coughings as a great number fled before the name of Jesus. At last only one demon remained, boasting that although he was alone he would never come out. The others, he disdainfully announced, were "weak and easily handled" but this would not be the case with him. He claimed we were too puny and he would remain.

The demon then loftily informed me that Satan was angry and extremely offened by what I and my church were doing. Lucifer would no longer tolerate such excursions into his domain. He snarled, "You fools, you damned mortal fools, I'll get you, I'll get you yet. You must die and this church is to be destroyed! Lucifer has willed it and it shall be done. I will not come out of this man. I've been in his family for generations. I control him and always will and there is nothing you can do about it-nothing at all. Where is your God now? I am here, where is He? You fools, you have no power over me, you are weak, you are divided. I will not come out of this man and now you will know that you cannot go any further in your folly."

When I demanded his name, he sneeringly refused, laughed at me and said, "I'll never tell you-ask your God. You'll have to have my name in order to force me out and I'll certainly never give it to you. I'm not dumb like some demons you have dealt with!"

We kept on praying, reading Scriptures, singing. He remained adamant, refusing to give his name or his work. Under persistant probing and prayer, he grew nervous and angry, at last growling that he was Satan himself. We mocked his claim, scoffing at him for imagining we would be deceived by so transparent a lie. He retorted, hissing, "Well,

you stupid Christians are always saying you are a part of Jesus, so we can claim to be a part of Satan too."

We brought a bit of grape juice in a small glass and, reminding the spirit of what it represented in the Lord's Supper, made him drink it. This provoked a violent reaction, the demon fighting to avoid it. We gave him several, forcing him to drink despite his screams, curses and threats. It was necessary to hold his nose shut to force his mouth open, then to cover his mouth to prevent the juice from being spewed out. The demon was now begging, "No more, please, no more grape juice, it burns, it burns. No more, please." The spirit was obviously shaken and weakened by this experience.

The demon was identified as the spirit of Antichrist. He grudgingly conceded that the name was correct but still insisted he would not leave. We continued in prayer, quoting Scriptures to prove that his power and authority was broken and he must leave. He then tried to fake his departure, coughing, heaving and retching, then letting the man sit up. We were alert, however, and when we asked the man to confess the Lordship of Christ and the preciousness of the blood, the demon was unable to continue the masquerade.

We pinned the man again, then repeated the Covenant of Blood aloud, putting the man's name in the places where "I" and "me" occur. At first, the demon claimed to be unaffected, then became restless, and finally began to howl begging us to stop. We pushed harder for we have found that a key to successful warfare is to never allow the demons to rest. Pressure should be maintained by shifting workers; allowing some to relax while others minister so that the demon is faced at all times by warriors fresh and eager for battle.

The demon grew increasingly nervous, obviously frightened by the failure of his bluff and the believer's refusal to halt the attack. As the reinforcements promised by Lucifer failed to

arrive his self-assurance cracked. He threatened hysterically, but instead of his bold statements that he would never leave, he began to talk of "ripping up this guys guts and killing him if I leave. I'll rip up his insides and have him vomit them up." The man did, in fact, vomit blood just before the demon left about 2:30 a.m.

Before he fled, the demon threatened me with murder. In frustration and anger he raged, "Do you know what you have done to my people? You fool! You have scattered them to the four winds and for this you must die!" We left rejoicing in the power of Jesus to liberate the captives, with the man who was delivered leading the rejoicing.

Saturday night, a vicious spirit furiously informed me that "I have a message to you, Win Worley, from Lucifer. You must die, you shall be destroyed and this church will be destroyed too. I hate you, Worley, and you have gone too far in this foolishness. Lucifer is tired of it and has ordered that you be killed. He has brought in hosts from everywhere to surround you and destroy you, to blot you out. You are doomed!" I smiled and replied, "Careful, you're frightening me again." The demon snapped, "Someday you'll drop your guard, Win Worley, then we'll swarm in and kill you. O, how I hate you! You must die, Lucifer wills it, Lucifer is Lord. You cannot escape.

After over two hours of battle, the spirit horribly convulsed the man and then came out screaming, ripping at the man and cursing. Once again Jesus was shown to be Lord.

Sunday night the services were full of power and demonstration of the Spirit of God. A woman was brought forward under demonic attack. She walked like a robot, stared at the floor and made no response to my queries. I prayed and began to repeat Philippians 2:9-11: "God... hath given him a name which is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow. . . and every tongue

should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God, the Father." I repeated it three times, and the head slowly lifted, revealing fury in hate-filled eyes. I repeated the verse twice more. Abruptly the demon went wild, shouting in a deep bass voice, "You will bow to Satan! You fool, you will bow to Satan! This whole church will bow to Satan!" Wrenching loose from me he began to swing at the men who rushed to my aid. Eight men were necessary to wrestle the woman to the floor.

The demon continued to repeat his boast that I and the church would be forced to bow to Satan, shouting over and over. "Satan is Lord, Praise to Satan!" As the spiritual pressure increased he pleaded. "Satan, smite these puny mortals, smite them now O mighty Satan!" The only result was to increase our praise to Jesus for the protection of His blood. This demon was extremely profane. Vulgar, filthy language flowed out steadily and several times we stopped the victim's mouth to force a halt. About midnight he left with a final piercing scream of defeat.

Monday night we ministered to a woman who was scheduled to enter a psychiatric ward on Tuesday in an effort to stave off a nervous breakdown. We prayed and defeated the demon spirits, leaving her well, with no need to enter the hospital. She will need further help but is on the road to complete victory.

March 8, 1973

A demon named Pride looked disdainful and contemptuous when I commanded him to leave. He indignantly replied, “Certainly not, I will not come out of her. I am keeping her from serving that Lord. Don't you realize that if I left her she would do all sorts of disgusting things? She would go around praying for the sick, pray in that disgusting language and

praise that stupid Lord, not to mention witnessing to all her friends!" He shuddered, "You see it is out of the question for me to come out, it would be just horrible, horrible! I simply cannot permit it.”

We continued the attack on the spirit and as his confidence waned, he showed signs of fatigue, growing rattled and angry. “It's all your fault,” he stormed at me. "We had her under control until she came to this damned church . and you, you and your ignorant talk about deliverance. Ugghh! It's all your fault and we will get you for this. She's a fool, a stupid dumb fool, all of you are fools. O, how I hate you and how I despise this church!"

Later, the spirit boasted, "You took eight of my brothers out of her the other night, but I won't leave, I promise you that. I will not come out. Oooh, how I hate you, everything was so nice until she came here." I queried why, if he was so powerful, he had not prevented her from coming to the church. Petulantly he answered, "I tried, I tried; the stupid bitch just would not listen. Oh, how I hate you, damn you and damn all of your damned angels too! If it wasn't for them, things would be different, let me tell you." With much screaming, and enough obscenities flying to blue the air, he finally left the young woman.

We have encountered another interesting tactic used by the forces of Satan. They will pretend they have gone, hoping to stop further efforts to obtain deliverance. Often the demon will announce, “OK, I'm leaving, are you satisfied? I'm going, I'm going." The voice dies off softly, then a weak voice, "I'm out." When you ask them how they can still speak through the person, they become angry. One so trapped was asked, "If you are out, how do you still speak?" "Ventriloquism!" he snapped peevishly.

March 10, 1973

An ex-Satan worshipper, was attacked attacked during the Wednesday services. Color drained from her face, leaving her white and scarcely breathing, almost in a coma. During the invitation, we forced the demons to manifest, touching off a savage resistance. Names claimed by the demons included Hate, Bride of Satan, and Son of Lucifer. Many others left without giving their names. The woman, 26 years old, ended the session with bruises all over her body from the enemy.

If you harass the demons with prayer, Scripture reading, songs of praise about the Blood of Jesus Christ, and command them in the name of Jesus to manifest, they will first assume a defiant and boastful attitude. If you persist, the spirit's confidence begins to give way. Frightened by the failure of Lucifer's legions to arrive to help, they become abusive and threatening, promising all sorts of violence upon those surrounding the afflicted person. They grow angry and wrathful as the pressure mounts and they weaken. They may then become petulant, whining, and even seek to bargain with those attacking them. Spirits will assert to the end that they will never leave, lying blatantly in an effort to intimidate the workers. No two demons react exactly alike, an evidence of their differing personalities.

One night a cornered demon began to babble, "I'm a Captain, I'm a Captain, you can't do this to me," over and over again. He continued, "You don't understand, I have so many things to do yet. I must wreck her marriage. The demons in her husband are working with me to destroy them both. They helped us keep her from church Sunday, but she came tonight. I tried so hard to keep her away." At this point the demon began sobbing and shrieking incoherently. Later, as

lesser demons gave up and fled the woman, he shouted, "No, no, don't go, I'll be all alone. No! Stop leaving, No! No!"

After hearing the demon in his wife, the husband sought and found deliverance for himself. He then brought three bottles of valium, a prescription tranquilizer (and the name of the chief demon). We informed the demon we were going to destroy them and flushed the capsules down the commode. We next took the bottle labels and set them on fire in view of the demon. Throughout these activities the demon was screaming, begging us to stop and rattling about how much work he still had to do. As the labels burned the screaming became more intense, the demon admitting that this would break his power over the woman.

Suddenly a 19-year-old girl standing nearby screamed and dived for the burning labels, crying "No, no, they're mine, they're mine, you must not, you must not." This touched off a violent battle with drug demons in this young woman. It was nearly 2:00a.m. before both victories were complete.

March 30, 1973

A twenty-year-old man came for prayer, deeply oppressed and troubled by masturbation. After years of failure to overcome the habit he now sought deliverance. I commanded the demon in the name of Jesus to manifest himself. He did, sneering angrily, "I have controlled this fool for 14 years and I will never come out." His appearance was accompanied by the characteristic twitching, tingling and drawing of the fingers and hands which is always associated with this type of sex spirit. (Guilt and Shame always accompany this spirit.)

We continued the attack without giving the spirit a chance to relax. As the demon weakened we forced him to give the name of another spirit, Claustrophobia. Masturbation then

left, fighting and cursing bitterly, screaming, coughing and retching violently. We demanded that Claustrophobia appear. He sullenly complied, making some uncomplimentary remarks about the "traitor" who had given his name away. He engaged in a verbal duel with us, claiming he would never come out, having been there so long already. He boasted that he had entered the boy at the age of two when an accident had ripped open his scalp. The child was rushed to the emergency room and wrapped tightly in a sheet while the doctors sewed up the wound. In this time of terror, the demon smugly announced, it had been quite simple to enter the child. He would certainly not leave his "house" after all this time, he snorted indignantly.

As his assurance slowly gave way to fear and angry threatenings, I inquired about the presence of other demons. He replied, "No, I'm the only one left." I doubted his statement but didn't press the question, concentrating instead on getting him out. He grew increasingly nervous and shaky, trembling violently. Finally, almost hysterically, he admitted (under our repeated questionings and reasonings from Scripture) that he would in fact have to leave. At this he broke into sobs of frustration and anger and began pleading with us, "Where can I go? Please don't send me out. I haven't caused much trouble," he blubbered, "and, I won't cause any more, please let me stay. Please have mercy." We refused, demanding that he leave without any further delay. In despair he cried bitterly, "All right, all right, I'm going. Ooooh! but I don't want to, I don't want to!"

He stiffened suddenly, hissing furiously, "They're laughing at me, they're laughing at me!" Looking to see whom he meant, I could see none of our workers laughing. I asked him who was laughing. Twisting his face in hatred, he snarled, "Those dirty bastards, I'll fix them." Turning to me he snapped, "There's five more inside, the dirty bastards. I'll

teach them to make fun of me because I have to go." I then demanded their names. "No! No! I can't do that, let me out now, let me out of here," he begged, terror in the eyes and voice. "No," I said firmly, "you can't come out until you give me the names of the others.'" Panicked, he whined "Please, please let me come out, I can't tell you the names, I dare not. They'll kill me." I scoffed, pointing out that demons cannot die. By this time the demon was bucking and pitching wildly. "You don't know what we mean by kill, stupid," he gasped at me. "Let me out, let me out, they'll get me, they'll get me." By now he was wailing and screaming hysterically. I insisted again, "Not until you give us their names“

"All right, all right, damn you," and he shouted out the names, headed by Rejection. "Now get me out of here quickly, you promised." At the word of command he left with a piercing shriek and a final convulsion of the man's body.

Quickly the face was twisted in rage. Obscenities filled the air as a guttural voice rasped, "That little ----fink, that dirty little fink. Oooo! Just wait til I get hold of him. He had his orders, that traitor!" Recognizing the spirit was Rejection, we ordered him to come out also. He snorted, "He was only a little one, I am much more powerful than he is. The only reason he had any authority was because he had been here so long. I will not come out." He confidently assured us that he was now chief and we might as well give up. Under our continued prayer barrage, praise and Scripture he informed us of the lesser demons used as “shields." He insisted that we could not attack him until these lesser spirits were removed. Because he spoke the truth, we attacked the lesser demons. One by one, they came out, leaving Rejection alone.

Although six demons had already left, Rejection sneered and said that they had been weak, but he was powerful and we would never dislodge him. He boasted he had made the fellow's life a nightmare of suffering and that his kind

inhabited every member of that family. It took time, but little by little his cockiness disappeared. He began to bluster and threaten, claiming he would kill if we persisted. At the end he tried to jerk the boy apart as he left in convulsions of rage and fury, screaming and cursing bitterly all the while.

April 3, 1973

Friday night still more people were saved, healed and delivered from demon spirits until 2:00 a.m. Saturday. That night the men met to pray and had a blessed time of worship. Sunday morning we ran from 10:30 a.m. until 3:00 p.m. In the evening we started at 6:30 as usual and most left at 11:30, though one group stayed until 2:30 a.m., battling to free a demonized person. More people were saved in the services.

It is always such a blessing to hear the testimonies of new babes who are growing, witnessing and learning how to walk with Jesus in the Word of God. They are constantly bringing in their friends and loved ones for salvation and deliverance. On Sunday night, as several persons were being dealt with for deliverance, I moved over to a man who appeared to be under strong demonic attack. The demon refused to manifest until I began to taunt, "Satan is a liar." Suddenly, hard breathing and a low growl warned that the demon was about to manifest. Several men moved in as the demon exploded, bellowing like a bull and flinging people in every direction. He spun me around and shoved viciously, sending me flying back toward the raised platform 10 feet away. I fell, just right to catch my back across the edge of the platform. By all rights I should have broken my back but, just before I hit, something broke my fall, letting me down so gently I didn't even bump. Later, as I dealt with the spirit, I heard him cursing God's angels. I asked him if he saw that angel catch

me. He snorted savagely and snapped, "There were thirteen, and that's my number, ughhhhhhhh!"

April 7, 1973

"You'll never get me out, Win," the demon sneered. This was a Six Six Six spirit speaking from a man. He continued, "One of these days I'll get you, big fella, and am I going to enjoy tearing you apart!" Hatred came from him like heat from a furnace. "You'll come out," I told him. "Remember last night there was one just like you in Bob?" Teeth clenched and eyes glowing with fury he replied, "I know, I watched the whole disgusting thing." When asked why he had not tried to aid the other demon he said, "We don't do that. Everyone has to stand on his own power. He should have fought harder." He shrugged callously, with no interest in his fallen brother demon.

"How about your shields?" I questioned. "Too bad about them," he said contemptuously. I was again impressed by the absolute selfishness and utter unconcern for any except themselves by these persons without bodies. Then I remembered! Earlier Six Six Six mentioned that he had four shields (lesser demons). Masturbation, Adultery and Immorality had manifested and had been cast out one by one. The ruler demon had then charged to the surface and taken over the battle. Clever strategy, I had forgotten the other shield demon.

Addressing Six Six Six I said, "I want to talk to the other demon." He began to shake his head, glaring. "In the name of Jesus, I command that other demon to manifest now." I was forced to repeat the command several times to overcome his resistance. The face changed and a surge of power rippled the muscles; the six men holding the man pinned to the floor were straining to keep him there. The demon jerked crazily

and only physical force coupled with prayer in Jesus' name kept him from breaking free. Snarling growls began to gurgle from the man's throat as he snapped viciously, lunging at everyone in reach.

The roars and growls were not like anything human, it seemed we were listening to a wild beast. The eyes of the man had changed, growing red and animal-like. As the unearthly sounds continued and the demon showed ever increasing strength we prayed that the Lord would give discernment. "It sounds like a werewolf!" a young man gasped. The demon went beserk, making a roaring lunge at the fellow who had spoken, snapping all the while. I called for the spirit of werewolf (lycanthropy) to leave the man. After a determined struggle he left, without ever speaking.

We then resumed the attack on Six Six Six, commanding him to manifest himself. After his shields were gone he grew weary of the struggle. About thirty minutes later he fled, cursing, screaming and trying to kill his victim. Again Jesus had won the fierce contest. It was 2:00 in the morning as we started home.

April 29, 1973

"Shut your mouth you stupid bastard, you can't order me around." Streams of obscenities, filthy invective and curses flowed like a river from the woman's mouth. The husky bass voice emerging from a woman sounded strangely out of place. The woman had come forward at the close of the service with a splitting headache. As I began to pray, rebuking the pain in Jesus' name, the vicious spirit arrogantly manifested. He stormily rejected all commands to leave, insulted that we "puny humans" would have the audacity to challenge him. He flatly denied that the name of

Jesus had any authority over him, and continually affirmed his allegiance to the worship of Satan.

Earlier, the demon had fought bitterly in an attempt to run the woman out of the building. Seven strong men had been able to stop this desperate bid to escape. Furious because of his failure to escape, he was a picture of frustrated rage and hatred, Glowering at me, he solemnly proclaimed, "You are cursed. This church is cursed. You are all doomed for you have defied the Lord Satan! Satan is Lord, Satan is Lord!"

After a time the demon began to tire, and grew more blustery and irritable, indicating that he was becoming frightened. Our workers showed no signs of tiring, no thought of giving up and were spelling each other to force the demon to remain at bay. Such continued pressure allows the demons no rest, upsetting and exhausting them. I moved in again to harass this spirit, whose name was Insanity. The Lord instructed me to repeat the woman's name and the word Agape to the demon. As I did the demon began to shriek "Don't do that, there's no such thing as love. There's no such thing. Stop it, I can't stand it, I can't stand it!" The demonic cries were beyond anything that I had ever heard.

I forced him to admit that he was defeated, that I held a position in Christ in the heavenlies, far above him and all powers and principalities, including Satan. I showed him the verses in Philippians 2 which speak of the name that is above every name, then forced him to confess that Jesus Christ is Lord. He fought, resisted and pleaded for mercy. We read Christ's titles in Isaiah 9 and forced him to repeat each one. After this I called him a traitor to Satan and he cried out "O Satan forgive me." He finally left, shrieking loudly.

May 16, 1973

"In the name of Jesus Christ, tell me your name!" The command had been repeated several times and each time the demon had smiled coyly, replying mockingly, "Oh, I forget. Suddenly the truth dawned on the worker leading the attack.

"You are a spirit of forgetfulness, aren't you? It took me a while to catch on to what you were saying." The demon curled his lip in disgust and answered, "Yes, you mortals are terribly dull and stupid."

Another demon said he was Sadism. He assured me that he was quite comfortable. He and his friends had entered her years earlier when the girl was only five. A relative had put a charm on her and she had a traumatic sexual experience with two male cousins. Sadism claimed that it had been quite easy to gain access to the girl's body with this kind of help.

At various times during the struggle he would excitedly urge, "Press a little harder on her leg, it will leave a big, beautiful bruise. Twist her arm more so she will remember this night." Again and again he crooned, "She's mine, she's mine, you can't have her. I've been here a long time and I'm quite comfortable. Get away from her. She belongs to us. Stop interfering. I'll never let her get here again, you stupid mortal clods." The spiritual pressure continued to mount until, just before he had to leave he shouted, "I hate you. I hate this church. I curse you and this church."

June 1973

This month I ended 10 years of teaching in public schools, to begin full time work in the church. The men of the church assumed my full support. I believe that this will bring a new expansion of the work.

July 1973

In response to an invitation, I went to minister in a small charismatic conference in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania. My wife and four young people from our church accompanied me. Our group was instrumental in delivering a number of persons from demonic bondage and cast out many evil spirits. In one young man we encountered a spirit who announced proudly that he was "Predestination" and had come from a Presbyterian church in the area. His job was to create a sort of fatalistic attitude. A Baptist man, who had been attending a Roman Catholic seminary, picked up some spirits we cast out. They included: Mariolatry, Obedience to the Priest, One True Church, One Holy Priesthood, Idolatry, and others.

August, 1973

Work at the church to free people never ceases. People continue to come in from everywhere. I went to present the deliverance message in Lawton, Oklahoma. My wife and four men accompanied me, (three of them drove 950 miles).

The church had had some "closet" deliverance (private dealings with the elders) but had only had very small manifestations. I was scheduled to speak Friday night and twice on Saturday and Sunday. The first night I spoke the service ran seven hours, and people were delivered from hundreds of evil spirits. Saturday we began at 10:00 a.m. and the services ran 15 hours non-stop, again continuous deliverances. All of my workers were busy as were the people of the church who had rapidly learned how to throw out evil spirits.

Sunday morning, I stood to sing before preaching. Halfway through the chorus, a demonized man on the front row

began to howl and was thrown violently to the floor, shrieking. Men rushed to him in an attempt to quiet the demon. I was about to have the men carry him out of the room when a 17-year-old boy was pitched to the floor screeching, knocking over five or six chairs.

I gave the invitation and people began to come and deliverance on a large scale began. This started a service in which thousands of demons were defeated in Jesus' name. As soon as one individual was freed, demons would break forth in another. Just as the day before, there was no time to stop, not even to eat meals. The building was filled with the screams of the tormented demons being forced to leave. After 12 hours, the last person was freed and we went home, weary but happy. Several people had been converted, including one Satan worshipper.

The next morning we returned to Chicago, exhausted, but blessed by what the Lord had done in Oklahoma. We discovered that our church family had been given many specific names to pray for in Oklahoma. When we checked them, they were the first names of persons who received deliverance in the meeting. What a wonderful God we serve!

Because of my extreme exhaustion, I collapsed the following week and demons attempted to kill me. Eight men came to my side and battled the enemy. A number of times the evil spirits managed to cut off my breathing. Only determined counterattacks by the trained workers kept me from unconsciousness. A powerful demon declared that Satan had issued orders to kill me immediately in retaliation for the damage done to his work in Oklahoma. The battle to free me from the spirits raged for over five hours. I learned again the extreme danger of becoming over-exhausted in this work.

September 1973

People called us to come to Tuscola, Illinois on a Saturday morning in a rented hall for a meeting. It was about a three-hour drive and 58 of our people drove there for the morning service. We had singing, testimonies, a sermon and then the deliverances began. We were busy for the rest of the day until 8:00 p.m., when we headed back to Chicago.

October 1973

My wife and another couple flew to Louisiana with me for a week of meetings. Five men left their jobs to drive there. On Thursday, six more young people drove in to help. Here too the familiar pattern of deliverance from evil spirits broke out. On each trip we learn more about the enemy and his tactics. The Hegewisch church has a vital part in my meetings because they provide powerful prayer support for the ministry.

February 1974

A deliverance meeting in Houston, Texas, was scheduled by three small charismatic churches (two Baptist, one Presbyterian). Two young men and my wife accompanied me to the meeting and we met many friends from a trip made to Houston two years before.

Although some people had witnessed a few mild "closet" type deliverances, none had seen it on a scale or en masse as we see it happen. As always, the people poured down the aisles for deliverance. I, my workers and others familiar with deliverance stayed busy for hours. The shrieks of the protesting enemy auditorium night after night. On the last

night of the eleven-day spirits filled the place. Great throngs of people filled the meeting there was standing room only.

I held two general deliverance sessions because so many people came. There were morning and afternoon sessions and often we did not stop to eat all day.

After the first two nights, when I would begin to close the service with an invitation to salvation, people began to quietly rise and to walk forward. By the time I asked the congregation to stand, the entire front and aisles were filled with people waiting for prayer. Many patiently stood in line for hours, more than one night, before managing to get to a worker or myself for prayer. In spite of this, there was no complaining. We would begin binding spirits at midnight. We always had to close with many people still needing help.

I returned to Chicago, convinced afresh and anew of the necessity of a public and continuous deliverance ministry in every Bible-believing church. The oppression of the enemy is so widespread, only a concerted attack by the churches on the problem will even begin to remedy the situation.

Because I was so exhausted I spent several days in bed when I returned home. However, I missed no preaching services. I must learn to pace myself better. No one can meet all of the needs of the tormented ones, for there are so many. We have just tasted of the compassion Jesus had toward the people.

March 1974

My, how time flies. I have had no time to write lately. The pace at the church seems always to increase and there is so little time to spend with my family and other ordinary things that need doing. How did I ever find time to teach school? The never ending stream of people who are coming for deliverance is the most unusual thing I have ever witnessed during my ministry. We are so crowded at the church.

Perhaps soon the Lord will give us a more adequate place in which to meet and minister.

A former Roman Catholic layman, now a member of our fellowship, was invited to testify at a charismatic Catholic meeting in Milwaukee. He arranged for me to be invited also. Two carloads of us went to a large convent Sunday afternoon.

The man gave his testimony of salvation and the baptism in the Holy Spirit. He also told of deliverance and how it had affected his entire family. I followed this with a gospel message. At the invitation many came seeking prayer, including some of the nuns and priests in the assembly. One of our 16-year-old boys (a converted Catholic) led an elderly nun into the personal experience of the new birth by receiving Jesus Christ as Saviour. There were a number of healings and some deliverance from evil spirits. We stayed until quite late, then drove home, happy and rejoicing about the things we had seen.

April 1974

I returned to Houston for another deliverance meeting in a different location. My family and two young men accompanied me. God set many free and this time I allowed time to relax and rest to avoid exhaustion.

It was during this meeting that a demonized young man came at me with an open knife, demonstrating the demons' hatred of me and the ministry of deliverance. At the beginning of the invitation he challenged me openly, snarling like a dog. I rebuked the demon in Jesus' name and he stopped only four feet away, rocking back and forth, brandishing the knife but unable to advance further. I continued to rebuke him using the authority of the Lord and forced him to throw the knife to the floor. He then attacked a

man on the front pew, was seized by the men and a three-hour deliverance followed. Many people were delivered in these days. I see afresh the crying need for churches to have deliverance as an integral, not an isolated, part of their ministry.

May 1974

I flew to New York City and for two nights I had the privilege of fellowship with and ministry to a small house church. There was some deliverance and healings in the name of Jesus there. I led the group to renounce their occult contacts and resentments and bitternesses.

June 1974

People from Milwaukee came in for help this month. We saw some tangled cords of witchcraft and many curses successfully dealt with and victory obtained. For a number of months now, we have refused requests for private counselling and/or deliverances. There are several reasons. First, in the pressure and drain of four services per week. If a person is able, but not willing to come to a public service for help in a demonic problem, we have found he is not likely to receive a great deal of help in a private session. Pride is a hindrance to deliverance. At the church there are many trained workers to assist physically and spiritually in deliverance. The services themselves seem to be a kind of therapy which prepares the way for, and helps hold deliverance from evil spirits.

August 1974

A couple, referred to us by Don Basham, came regularly this month to the church and benefited much through counselling and deliverances. Presbyterian charismatics, they live in a northwest suburb or Chicago, about 50 miles from our church. We never cease to marvel at the way in which God continues to bring people to the church for help.

This month I received a call from Norman Parish inviting me to come and minister in the churches under the Continental Missionary Crusade in Guatemala.

November 1974

This month a Baptist lady from the South (with whom I have corresponded for over two years) brought her tormented son to Chicago. He is 32 years of age and a basket case because of demons. She had heard of our ministry and contacted me. I sent tracts, counsel and books and she arranged to come to Chicago after all this time. They attended four services during their visit and she left praising the Lord for help that both received while here. Oh, how long before churches everywhere can offer help to the oppressed and will not send them away empty?

January 1975

Two young black men from Milwaukee came to us, referred by Don Basham. They were both helped and received hours of deliverance in the two services they attended. Brothers they were both called to preach. Someone laid hands on them in a church and imparted to them all the false gifts, including tongues. These counterfeit gifts brought

oppression and misery into their lives causing them to seek help.

Hereditary witchcraft, traced back to Africa, had to be ferreted out. The power of those curses had to be broken and renounced before freedom from many demons came. After the power of the evil spirits was overcome, the fellows joyfully received genuine gifts from the Holy Spirit. They went home praising the Lord.

A Southern Baptist preacher came 500 miles with his family for four services. All received great help from the Lord and were delivered from many spirits. On the way home, he began to praise the Lord in a prayer language.

A tormented lady came to see us whose family is deeply involved in a Oneness (Jesus Only) Pentecostal group. This group always has many religious demons, but in this particular one, the pastor had led them into actually practicing witchcraft. This led to wife swapping and sex orgies in the church. After 40 homes had been disrupted, the group fled the area and transplanted the evil colony elsewhere. Although not directly involved, except through her family, this woman fell under the curses and spells from the pastor (a warlock) and others. She came a number of times and received a great deal of relief from wicked spirits.

February 1975

I was invited to minister at a Christian club on Purdue University campus (in Hammond, Indiana). The session was at night and the room was packed with people. There was a chance to speak and answer questions on the occult and demons for $2^{1/2}$ hours. As a result of this meeting, there has been a fresh stream of visitors to the church.

March 1975

On March 3, my wife and I, with three men from the church, flew to rusk, Texas, to minister. Three more men came by car. We were scheduled for three days of meetings, and stayed busy in deliverance most of the time there.

On March 6, my wife and I, and one of the men, went on to Guatemala City, Guatemala. It was a time of refreshing as we ministered among the Guatemalans. The simplicity and for us freshness of their sincere faith and worship was such a blessing.

On March 12 my wife and I flew on to Bogota, Colombia, for 3 days. We had a blessed time of sharing and fellowship and had the opportunity to deliver two severely bound young men. One coughed up a great deal of black, slimy material which gave off an awful stench. Both received great amounts of deliverance from evil spirits. There was also an opportunity to minister to some Colombian Christians at a Bible class. We were able to share with them the way out of occult bondage and resentments. On the way home, due to a scramble in flight schedules, we were placed in first class seats (at no extra charge) and were royally fed and attended all the way to Florida. The Lord is so very gracious.

A Personal Word

As I come now to the closing of the diary section, it is with a sense of thanksgiving and praise to our God Who has taught us so many things during this time. One important thing is not to fear the dreadful prouncements and curses of the demons. They are quite earnest in their hatred but are unable to perform all they threaten. It is the intervention and protection of God that keeps them in check. "Thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ . . ." (II

Corinthians 2:14). "Nevertheless, the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, the Lord knoweth them that are His" (II Timothy 2:19), "Ye shall not fear them, for the Lord your God shall fight for you" (Deuteronomy 3:22).

Things did not stop happening here with the ending of this diary. Far from it; the pace has never slackened and opportunities for ministry continue to increase week by week. We have been passing through opened doors to carry the message of deliverance to whomever will listen. As the Lord said, “Behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it. . . "(Revelation 3:8).

We are still learning to apply the wisdom and facts learned in this ministry, both in our church and in other places. We do not have all the answers, only a few. We constantly run into perplexing problems and time after time we are shut up to faith to find solutions in situations involving spiritual warfare.

The rewards are unbelievably good. People restored to sanity; lives which had been twisted and made ugly by sin straightened and filled with the glory which only God can give; drug addicts healed and rehabilitated; people in occult and other bondages freed to become profitable servants of the Lord; and lethargic or spiritually crippled Christians coming alive and walking with the Lord. To see the Lord Jesus come to the rescue of the hopeless, the helpless, the downtrodden and destroyed is a compensation hard to describe. In a very real sense then, this is not the end, but rather a glorious beginning!

Part 2

Battling the Hosts of Hell

Introduction

There is an upheaval in all areas of human endeavor which defies any permanent solutions. It invades the broad arenas of society and misses no facet of human experience-social, economic, political or religious. The never ending search for solutions to disease, hunger, frustration, war, pressures, poverty, etc., go on and on. Panacea after panacea is announced, heralded as the ultimate answer and enthusiastically the theories are implemented and zealously carried out, only to fail and to discover that there are many exceptions which do not yield to the remedy. Everyone seems agreed that something is wrong and there desperately needs to be a clear-cut answer.

To be honest, the ultimate answer must always be to remedy the deficiencies in human beings. It is in persons at war and restless within themselves from which evil doings proceed (James 4:1,2). People filled with warfare inside will involve others and then whole families and communities and when nations become involved, war can break out between the nations.

The unrest in individuals is that which produces Hitlers and other men with pretensions to grandeur. They play on the prejudices and fears of others, inflaming and enlarging them for their own evil ends. Evil environments and injustices are the offspring of these seething inner passions and unrest and self- seeking. This is why the solution does not lie in lopping off the branches of social injustice, inequity, bad surroundings, etc. What we need is not better housing or better society, but better people! Cleaning a pig and installing him in an air-conditioned apartment will not affect his pig nature at all. He must be changed inside first. His outlooks and attitudes must be remade and fashioned in more desirable patterns.

Psychology and education have had their try at this and the complex situation grows worse rather than better. Millions of dollars have been poured into programs of social reform and education in order to stop the avalanche of social disaster and the disintegration of the very fabric of society-all to no avail. Instead of improvement, the situation further deteriorates, week by week.

There is a real explanation for the calamitous situation in which the world finds itself, and it is so simple and self-evident it is surprising that the wise men have not found it. Jeremiah stated God's views of the problem long ago: "For my people have committed two evils. They have forsaken me, the fountain of living waters, and hewed them out cisterns, broken cisterns that can hold no water" (Jeremiah 2:13). Man-made understandings and solutions can never succeed. The revelations of the Bible dealing with the conflict between God and Satan, when properly understood, can throw light on the problems in the world from a frame of reference which cannot be obtained elsewhere. God never treats only the symptoms and the outcroppings, but digs to the very heart of the matter, even to the "thoughts and intents of the heart."

There is then a supernatural solution to the supernatural conflict which underlies the basic restlessness and rebellion fomenting in the world. Only by seeking God's truth in the matter can we be enlightened as to the extent and nature of the problem and most importantly, as to its ultimate solution. With this cosmic conflict between God and the devil in mind, the seemingly meaningless boiling tumult and utter chaos often evidenced in men's affairs begin to take on a different look. A sinister and cunning intelligence, armed with tremendous power and resourcefulness is directing a purposeful plan of destruction and wanton upset. The ultimate destruction of man is the aim and object and no

opportunity is overlooked to hoodwink, hurt, harm and deceive man into a wilful rebellion against God and His Word. The trouble is supernaturally generated, therefore only a supernatural solution will work.

God has a remedy for this. It begins with the new birth, giving men a new heart through receiving Jesus Christ as Saviour. To overcome demonic outposts already set up within the person by the enemy, and to cope with any invaders who may manage to gain entrance to the person later, God has ordained the ministry of deliverance from evil spirits in the name of Jesus Christ. Because the churches of Jesus Christ have, for many years, seemingly "lost" this message of deliverance from demon spirits (and the Bible teaching which unmasks the enemy and puts him on the defensive and in a position to be defeated), Satan has gained and used much valuable ground for his cause. If this be true, then if churches would rally to the Bible and learn how to find and attack the enemy, it could lead to peace within individuals, families, communities, and even nations would be affected. Certainly it is worth a try.

Chapter 1

THE SATANIC COSMOS

Derek Prince writes, "Today, by divine providence, the veils of convention and carnality are once again being drawn aside, and the church of Jesus Christ is being confronted by the same manifest opposition of demon power that confronted the church of the New Testament. In these circumstances, the church must once again explore the resources of authority and power made available to her through the truth of the Scripture, the anointing of the Holy Spirit, and the Name and the Blood of the Lord Jesus Christ."[1]

In the Scriptures, both holy and unholy spirit beings are designated as angels (see Revelation 12:7). Usually the unholy angels are referred to as demons, translated in the King James Version as devils. The chief of the fallen angels is an archangel who has at least forty names given in Scripture. Some are proper names, others are descriptive. For example, in Revelation 12:10 he is called the accuser of the brethren. He is called "that old Serpent" (Revelation 20:2), indicating his guile, Lucifer, Son of the Morning (Isaiah 14:12), his title when he fell. Devil means accuser or slanderer and it is of Greek origin (Revelation 12:9). Satan means adversary or resister and is of Hebrew origin; Apollyon means destroyer; the term Dragon speaks of his power. He is also called Prince of devils (Matthew 9:34), Prince of this world (John 12:31), god of this world, and prince of the power of the air (Ephesians 2:2). Belial is implied to be his title in II Corinthians 6:15. In II Kings 1:2, 6, 16, he is referred to as Beelzebub, implying a prince of demons. As Dr. Chafer says, "In power, prominence and importance, Satan appears in the Bible second only to the Trinity."[2]

Second only, therefore, to knowing the triune God and the value of His redeeming grace is knowing the truth about the enemy of God, who "as a roaring lion walketh about seeking whom he may devour" (I Peter 5:8).

Frances Manuel gives us this useful summation: "We do have clear and plain teaching regarding the demons themselves. Demons in vast numbers constitute a part of Satan's hierarchy and fight in his army. They are spiritual beings without bodies of their own, hence they seek embodiment; they have supernatural power and strength. They are not omniscient, but are creatures of cunning intellect and given to deceits and wiles. They are unclean, corrupt, and bent on destruction and ruin. They degrade the bodies they invade and possess, whether of animals or men. They tremble at the Word of God and have to bow to the authority of Jesus Christ whether exerted directly by Him or by those to whom He has delegated the authority to subject them."[3]

Mrs. Penn-Lewis defines the satanic forces described in Ephesians 6:12 as: "Principalities-force and dominion dealing with nations and governments; Powers-having authority and power of action in all the spheres open to them; World Rulers-governing the darkness and blindness of the world at large; Wicked Spirits in heavenly places the forces being directed in and upon the Church of Jesus Christ in wiles, fiery darts, onslaught, and every conceivable deception about doctrine which they are capable of planning."[4]

She continues: "All teachings' originating from deceiving spirits weaken the authority of the Scriptures; distort the teaching in the Scriptures; add to the Scriptures the thoughts of men; or put the Scriptures entirely aside. . . .The test of all thought and belief therefore is its harmony with the written Scriptures in its full body of truth, and the attitude to the cross, and sin."[5]

Dr. Chafer points out the "Demon influence, like their activity, is prompted by two motives: both to hinder the purpose of God for humanity, and to extend the authority of Satan. They therefore, at the command of their king, willingly cooperate in all his God-dishonoring undertakings. This influence is exercised both to mislead the unsaved and to wage an increasing war against the believer." (Ephesians 6:12)[6]

When you were born as a human being, you became the object of extreme hatred and jealousy from the Archangel Lucifer and his hosts, for it was on human beings (not angels) that God elected to display His grace, love and mercy unexcelled. When Adam and Eve were placed in the Garden of Eden, and dominion over the earth was handed to Adam, Satan sulked and raged. The earth was to be given over, not to another angel of rank and dignity, but to a mere handful of dirt. The indignity could not be borne.

When he saw what God was doing in placing this puny creature in charge of his former domain, the devil immediately began to design a plan to plant rebellion in the man, thus to depose him from the position of overlordship God had given men. Satan understood that only in this way could he dispose of this upstart and at the same time express his own disdain, hatred and anger toward God. He succeeded, but what he did not know was that, although God had no alternative plan for angels, He did, in His unsearchable grace and love, have a way by which He could save His fallible creature man from his disastrous alliance with Lucifer.

When grace was extended to the man and woman in the Garden of Eden through the provision of substitutionary blood, the promise was made that some day God would send the Saviour to be the Lamb of God. Satan was outraged. Love and grace were beyond his ken, and he could neither receive

nor understand them. Thus commenced the fierce battle between Satan and God for the control of the human beings God put on earth in the re-creation. The Bible narrative is a continually unfolding story of the titanic struggle that Satan has waged to prevent the coming of the Messiah according to the Word of the Lord.

After being outmaneuvered by God and failing with Adam and Eve, Satan took note that God had said that the Saviour would come through the seed of the woman. He soon managed to deceive Cain into becoming the first “do-it' yourself” religionist. Once Cain entered the bondage of false religion, it was only a short step to the murder of the one who was worshipping in Spirit and in truth. By persuading Cain to attempt a bloodless approach to God (insuring that he would be rejected by God) and then filling his heart with murderous rage toward his brother Abel, Satan thought he had a master foolproof plan. Cain's bloodless approach (like many today) denied the guilt of his soul before God and the necessity of death to cover the penalty of sin (Romans 3:23). "The soul that sinneth it shall die." (Ezekiel 18:4, 20). When Cain killed Abel, the obedient son was removed. Cain, smeared by his brother's blood, was certain to be cursed and rejected by God. What the devil did not know was that all the while God was preparing to circumvent all this through the birth of Seth, through whom the promise would pass.

The super angel continued to invade the affairs of men and by the time of Noah, he had managed, by supernatural power, to infiltrate the human race with angelic creatures who somehow took the bodies of humans (to father monstrous hybrid offspring, half demon and half human, Genesis 6:2). There were giants in physical and mental stature, all depraved and incredibly wicked. Satan reasoned that because the Messiah was to be the seed of a woman, by polluting the entire race, God would be unable to fulfill His

promise of a Saviour. Certainly God's Son would not be half demon!

At last, when the entire race had been tainted by the demonic strain, except for Noah and his family, God again struck the devil a mighty blow and had Noah prepare an ark. With one sweep, God wiped out the entire polluted human race which had been defiled beyond redemption by demonic tampering (Genesis 6:5-7). The flood again cleared the way for God's perfect plan of redemption. Removing the demonic taint is the only logical explanation for God's unprecedented complete destruction of the human race. Drastic means were necessary.

Noah proved to be the glorious exception in an earth filled with violence and he found grace in the eyes of the Lord. Through Noah's obedience the human race was saved and the devil's maneuvering was thwarted once again.

Satan struck next by creating incest in Noah's family and by fomenting and stirring in the affairs of the descendents of Noah. He steered the whole race again back into the bondage of idolatry and worship of the stars. This culminated in the construction of the mighty ziggurat, known as the tower of Babel, a monument to man's rebellion against God. Again God intervened, this time breaking the unity of the people by confusing their languages, thus stopping construction of this expression of man's disregard for God and His plan.

Satan continued to work ceaselessly to drag men and women away from the place of blessing to idolatry. God in sovereign grace reached down into the midst of the idol worshippers and called out a man named Abram to follow Him. Abraham, as he was later called, was led into stormy paths of faith and testings. In spite of many human faults and failings, he enjoyed great success in the business of being God's man.

The descendents of Abraham, chosen by God to carry out his promises, were sent into Egypt to sojourn during a famine, but like so many, they went to sojourn and stayed on and settled down, instead of returning to the land of promise. Satan did this, as he still does, by giving material prosperity and abundance to persuade men to miss God's perfect will.

The result was the galling slavery of Egyptian bondage which gripped them, and was to last for centuries. Now, when they did desire to leave, they could not, being slaves. The devil seemed to have carried the day. However, faith was kept alive in Israel through the bones of Joseph and his prophecy that they would some day carry his bones back to the promised land. (Genesis 50:25; Hebrews 11:22) Triumph came in the call of Moses and his torturously slow preparation for the task of leading the Children of Israel out of Egypt and back to the land God had given them centuries before.

On Mount Sinai, God gave them a perfect set of laws, but even while Moses was in communion with God on the mountain, Satan worked mightily. This time he stirred up the licentious and lascivious desires of the people and arranged for a nude orgy of "worship" to the golden calf that had been manufactured by Aaron (Exodus 32:35). This episode again illustrated the rebellion in their hearts. There was a bloody judgment executed upon the disobedient as God called for absolute separation from idolatry.

After much purging and forty more years of agonizing preparation, God got His slow people ready for the victorious march into the promised land. Always the devil sought to lead the people into idolatry and immorality in order to bring them to where God's judgment was sure to fall upon them.

As Dr. Chafer observes, "Evidently demons have always been active in the world from the dawn of human history; but as the occasion may arise, they become more active at one time than at another. When the Son of God came to earth, took a human body and was manifested in the flesh, the very Creator and God against Whom the demons had originally rebelled, there was a violent and powerful upsurge of demonic manifestations and power over all the world. It was almost as if the unseen world, in torment and resentment at the presence of the Godman, went into fresh spasms of rebellion and fury."[7]

When the coming of the promised Messiah was near, there was a mighty Satanic upheaval. The hosts of hell were rearing up to hinder this manifestation of the living Son of God on earth. Even before He was born, Satan was stirred to oppose the Saviour. When Mary received the angelic visitation informing her of the miraculous conception of the Son of God in her womb, the adversary moved to attempt to convince Joseph to put her away, breaking the engagement and leaving Jesus to be born under the serious handicap of an illegitimate birth. God intervened supernaturally, checking the enemy, and eliminating all Joseph's doubts about his bride-to-be. Obediently, Joseph cloaked the Son of God with his name, thus protecting the mother and child from the stigma of a child born out of wedlock.

When the time for Jesus' birth drew near, Satan struck again, moving Caesar to order a census (which was never completed). Mary had to make a cross-country trip on the back of a donkey at a critical time in the pregnancy, but again God intervened to protect His Son, and Mary made the trip safely.

The enemy next arranged that every inn and room in the village be filled, leaving no room for the weary couple. A stable was the only shelter available. It was not the clean,

beautiful place of the Christmas pageants, but a vile place, reeking of manure and urine, swarming with flies and maggots, loaded with disease germs. In this unsanitary, filthy stable the Son of God was born. From the natural and human standpoint, both mother and child should have died of childbed fever and infection, but again the Father overruled and protected them.

Satan never gives up. About two years later, wise men arrived from the East, looking for a great King who had been born earlier. Ordinarily you look for a prince to be born in the palace of a King; accordingly, they inquired of King Herod. He was interested, especially when Satan whispered to him that this prince was a threat to his own throne. Herod gave careful but hypocritical instructions to the Eastern visitors, pretending that he, too, wanted to worship the child king. God moved and warned them in a dream not to report back to Herod after they visited and worshipped a "young child in a house" (not a new born babe in a manger). (Matthew 2:11, 16).

Herod's fury knew no bounds when he discovered how he had been tricked. Again, prompted by Satan, the King issued a decree condemning all babies two years and younger to be butchered. In this way he felt confident he would rid himself of the new Prince. God moved promptly, warning Joseph in a dream to flee to Egypt, which he did, escaping the trap set by the devil.

There were continuous attacks on Jesus during his days of ministry. Slurs were hurled at his parentage: "Where is thy father?" (John 8:19). Attempts to trip him with catch questions and efforts to kill him were among the methods employed by the enemy. All were successfully eluded by the Son of God.

When Jesus came to the end, the super-attempt to forestall God's plan was tried. Satan sought to kill him physically in

the garden, wringing from the Saviour the anguished pleas for life to make it to the cross. (Matthew 26:38, 39). To imagine that Jesus attempted to escape the cross at that zero hour, pleading with His Father to let him be spared from the awful anguish of the cross, seems to be totally out of keeping with Jesus' character and mission in life. His prayers, thrice uttered, were answered and the enemy was not permitted to kill him in the garden, but strength was given to make it all the way to Calvary.

On the cross He hung in agony and blood. A supreme display for all time of the cruelty and harshness of the satanic forces, sin revealed in all its ugliness. It was also a magnificent advertisement to all the ages showing God's unfathomable love for the sinful creatures who stood under His righteous judgment. For an accurate description of the sufferings on the cross, written hundreds of years before crucifixion was invented, read Psalm 22. There is detailed his death as the result of a broken (ruptured) heart.

At the tomb, it seemed that Satan had finally triumphed but Praise God! early on the first day of the week, all was changed completely, for time and eternity. The Son of God came out of that tomb, the keys of hell and death dangling at His belt (Revelation 1:18). This was total victory!

The Battle Today

Satan and his forces continue today in their steadfast opposition against the overwhelming evidence that they will surely lose the battle. Dr. Chafer declares that Satan "is the living contender against the believer in the realms of spiritual life and activity as well as in the area of flesh and blood."[8] Satan and his fallen angels are sharply limited in power compared with God, for they are mere finite creatures who can do nothing outside the permissive will of God. They

possess great knowledge, but are not omniscient; they have vast power, but are not omnipotent; they cover the world with their delegated responsibility, but are not omnipresent. Compared to men, however, they are far more powerful, wise and dangerous.

Robert Peterson points out that, "The master passion of Satan for worship leads him to gain worship by whatever method brings the best results. He gains the worship of millions of intelligent people through counterfeit systems of truth, persuading them that he does not exist; or that he holds no dread for the educated and informed, who either belittle his influence or dismiss it as humbug. The superstitious on the other hand, are held in bondage by fear, a fear the Western world cannot understand because it defies explanation."[9] As Mrs. George Needham observes: ". The root of idolatry is demonology. All its stupidity and senseless ceremony are but addenda to the main facts. The senses are gratified, the passions unloosed, the conscience deluded-but chief over all, Satan is worshipped."[10]

The demons, and all their dupes, reject the Bible. One challenged demon stoutly maintained, "We will win, you just wait and see; there are only a few of you and we have the majority and we will win. Satan, my king, explained it to us and told us that we were going to win. You'll see." When we pointed out the Scriptures refuting this idea, he sneered and said that we were lying, that his king was right, and that they were going to win.

That morning I had preached on the triumph which is in the very name of Jesus in every area. A prophecy had followed confirming this truth. I inquired of the demon if he had heard the messages. He answered indignantly and petulantly, "It's all lies what you said, lies! We are going to win. We have the majority and we will win. What you said was all lies." Most demons are more knowledgeable and will concede that

they will eventually go to the pit, but they emphasize that it is not time yet and that they do not want to talk about it. They fear and dread the pit and its consequences.

"There can be very little doubt that the demons do have a highly organized empire of evil," Peterson writes out of direct observation as a missionary in Borneo. "I myself have heard through the lips of possessed persons, two demons arguing over disputed territory. It seems that the demons are given boundaries over which they are not allowed to pass. Again I have heard demons trying to assert authority over other demons. If the one trying to usurp authority is lower in rank than the other one, there is apt to be violence. On the other hand, if the demon is high in rank, other demons must submit to his higher authority."[11]

"With those who are immersed in idolatry, Satan gains his end through fear, but with those who, having the Bible, should be acquainted with the Devil's devices, his most effective work is that of deluding men into believing that all this talk of demonic activity is mere superstitious and unscientific nonsense, so fulfilling Satan's description as the one'. . . who deceiveth the whole world.' (Revelation 12:9)"[12]

Michael Harper flashes the alert that, "Behind the facade of religious life there is a spiritual battle raging. There seem to be many who are not fully aware of this warfare. From time to time there is a dramatic collision between the power of the Spirit and that of Satan. Success for the Christian will depend in a large measure on recognizing the work of the devil and knowing how to defeat and expel him from every situation ""So it is today, there is a fierce conflict and there are those who do not wish to pass this way. But we cannot avoid the battle—for if we do not fight the enemy, he will still come at us. . .“ [13]

This conflict began long before the birth of Jesus and reached its height during His ministry. It is only logical to

assume, from Scripture and on the basis of the reaction of the god of this world and his cohorts to His first appearance, that Jesus' Second Coming will be preceded by unprecedented upheavals of spiritual power. The powers of darkness will be parading their hidden powers in a vain attempt to prevent the return of the Lord of Glory for His church.

Early in this century, Mrs. Penn-Lewis noted, "It is . . . clear in Bible history that the manifestation of the power of God at Pentecost, and through the Apostles, meant again an aggressive attitude to the powers of darkness. [Therefore] the growth and maturity of the Church of Christ at the end of the dispensation will mean the same recognition, and the same attitude toward the Satanic hosts of the prince of the power of the air; with the same co-witness of the Holy Spirit to the authority of the Name of Jesus, as in the early Church. In brief, that the Church of Christ will reach its high water mark, . . . when it knows how to bind the strong man' by prayer; 'command' the spirits of evil in the Name of Christ, and deliver men and women from their power."[14]

Harper writes these encouraging words: "These wicked beings can suggest evil, but cannot coerce the will of another creature. They may spread snares and devices to ruin the children of God, but cannot compel any other being to comply with their designs, nor can they employ God's creation other than as He decrees. They have never been able to defeat God, and actually God uses them as instruments to correct the erring saints."[15] (Luke 22:31-32; 1 Corinthians 5:5; I Timothy 1:20) Someone has remarked that Satan is like a monkey wrench which the Lord uses to tighten up loose nuts! Be of good cheer, saints of God! Satan is severely limited and all his bluster and bluff about 'all power' is sham. Our God is still on the throne and He rules! Hallelujah!

[1]From Expelling Demons by Derek Prince, copyright by Derek Prince Pub., Ft. Lauderdale, Fla., 33302. Used by permission. p. 1.

[2]From Systematic Thelogy, Volume II, by Lewis S. Chafer, copyright 1947 by Dallas Seminary, Dallas, Tex. Used by permission. p. 33.

[3]From Though An Host Should Encamp by Frances Manuel, copyright 1971 by Christian Lit. Crusade, Washington, Pa. Used by permission. p. 149.

[4]From War on the Saints by Jesse Penn-Lewis, copyright 1973 by Thomas E. Lowe, Suite 1500, 2 Penn Plaza, N.Y., N.Y. 10001. Used by permission, p. 17.

[5] Ibid., pp. 21, 22.

[6] Chafer, op. cit., p. 121.

[7]Ibid., p. 117.

[8]Ibid., p. 36.

[9]From Are Demons For Real? by Robert Peterson, copyright 1968 by Overseas Miss. Fellowship, Moody Press, Chicago. Used by permission. p. 26, 27.

[10] From Angels and Demons by Mrs. George Needham, Moody Press, Chicago. p. 62. " Peterson, op. cit., p. 107.

[12] Ibid., p. 51.

[13]From Spiritual Warfare by Michael Harper, copyright 1970 by Michael Harper, Plainview, N.J. 07060. Reprinted by permission. p. 10.

[14]Penn-Lewis, op. cit., pp. 43, 44.

[15]Harper, op. cit., p. 53.

Chapter 2

INVADING ENEMY TERRITORY

"And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among the people. And his fame went throughout all Syria; and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those who were possessed with devils and he healed them." (Matthew 4:23, 24)

Jesus preached the "gospel of the kingdom" and commissioned His disciples to do the same (Luke 10:9, 17-20; Mark 16:15-18; Matthew 10:1, 7, 8). It should be noted that the content of His charge is very similar, whether given before or after His resurrection. Modern disciples have His promise: "Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that believes on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do, because I go unto my Father. And whatever you shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If you shall ask anything in my name, I will do it." (John 14:12-14) Who makes this powerful promise? "Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, and today, and forever." (Hebrews 13:8)

As one moves into the shadowy realms of the demonic, there are few guideposts and even fewer friends to encourage you. The obstacles will mount higher than you ever dreamed possible. Few are able to tread this dark path without their hearts failing them for fear. Although the Word of God spells out the broad outlines of the spiritual world, details are scarce and hard to find. This is probably understandable because of depraved man's insatiable curiosity after the dark and forbidden world of the demonic. Could it be that he

might push eagerly and foolheartedly past the safeguards God has given into the areas of knowledge which could only lead into ensnaring bondage and subjection, without the protection of the blood of Jesus Christ? Understanding this, and actually acting upon it, are about as different as reading about a war is from fighting it.

In the warfare itself, tactics must be adapted to the situation being confronted, because the enemy is full of wiles and deceits and hatred and he never fights with the slightest regard to any rule of fairness. We know from the Bible what our weapons are, and what our defensive armor is, but we are not given the detailed strategy in advance for situations involving hosts of demons of many differing evil propensities. God in His wisdom has not ministered to man's idle curiosity, but He can and does meet his needs. What one needs to do the work God gives him, will surely be given (James 1:5).

I believe the Lord Jesus Christ provides a full-orbed ministry to man's need in the Gospel. The first and keystone work is that of evangelism, of course-winning people to Christ. Thank God, this ministry has thousands of dedicated and zealous advocates, passing out tracts, preaching and witnessing, leading many into salvation through faith in Jesus Christ.

Moving farther into the promises of God, there are not nearly so many engaged in the healing ministry and in exercising the gifts of the Holy Spirit, which are also included in the Great Commission. When you move still farther, to deliverance from evil spirits, you are in almost unexplored territory.

As Donald Jacobs emphasizes, “The casting out of demons was an act which had crucial importance to the witness of Jesus Christ, for it proved without doubt that His power exceeded the power of the enemy.”[1] “It was not as though

Jesus ran across the phenomenon (of demons) here and there and finally decided He had to do something about it. On the contrary, casting out demons was a crucial, if not indispensable part of His ministry. His dialogue with the demons and His power over them laid bare the central facts of His incarnation victory over the enemy of men's souls. He could spoil the enemy's goods and did."[2]

What a crushing realization it is when a pastor, well trained and fairly competent in fundamental Bible doctrine, has to face up to the embarrassing fact that many things in the practical world do not compute according to the neat, pat theories in the theology textbooks. One must learn to preach clever little arguments to get around the obvious emphasis on the supernatural and the miraculous in the early church to explain the disconcerting absence of such signs in most churches today!

The problem is compounded when you study the Bible closely. It becomes harder and harder to rationalize away what the text clearly states shall be the credentials of the believers in this age. Terrible thoughts plague you, such as, why were these facts so hidden from Paul and the others that they never preached plainly that these things were to cease. And who decides when and where? Why should Professor So and So or Doctor Blank be studied as an essential to the understanding of what God means in His Word?

Above all, what about these awful, ignorant upstarts (without the benefit of your scholarly training and study) who are trotting around all over the country and insisting that the same things are happening today as happened in New Testament days? Of course, they must be lying hucksters, fakers after money, and so on.

While it is true there are many fakes and religious racketeers in the business of fleecing God's people (and always have been), you still run across disquieting evidence

of the fact that not all of these things are fraudulent by any means. Some are genuine acts of faith and spiritual authority by genuine servants of God. Then too, there is the unsettling fact that the devil is a counterfeiter, and why would he continue to "counterfeit" that which God has dropped? His method is always to copy God, not to be different (Isaiah 14). The existence of false copies indicates a reality that is being duplicated. Ought we not to drop our theological pretensions, admit our powerlessness, and seek the reality which is our birthright, in the one place where we can be sure of our ground. . . the Word of God?

Peter and John always bothered me a little by their brashness and impulsiveness with the crippled man at the gate. Instead of the standard prayer, "Lord, please heal this dear man, if it be Thy will, but if not give him grace to bear his affliction bravely and enable him to be a great witness and testimony through it all," they directly commanded him to be well in the mighty name of Jesus.

Of course, I "knew" that these poor ignorant fishermen needed the miraculous to authenticate their ministry and make people listen to them. I and other trained preachers need only the Bible. Yet somehow I noticed, in spite of myself, that the miracle gathered a crowd, eager to hear the message, without promotion, letter, advertisement, buses, or any of the modern trappings "necessary" to lure in the reluctant throngs. At times I felt so disloyal to my training and conditioning that I wished fervently for the miraculous to flare again, just to see if it was not still better at getting the job done than all the visitation programs and the careful departmentalizing, etc. of the up-to- date church.

I and my church certainly do not claim to have all the answers. But we have learned that the principles expounded in the Bible do still work. Where there is faith (Romans 10:17) the miraculous, including power and authority over

demons, will still be manifested to the glory and honor and praise of the Lord Jesus Christ when appropriated by believer priests. We do not boast. We know nothing we were not ourselves taught of the Holy Spirit through the Word. God has given the rule, "Freely ye have received, freely give." We are green and still growing. I hope we will ever be in this condition, for those who get "ripe" only hang on the tree and rot. May God grant us never to reach such a peak of "maturity" that we feel there are no more truths to grasp, no more heights to be scaled, no more wonders to be seen.

Again I stress that I am only trying to set down on paper and relate what actually has happened. I have withheld the names of individuals involved to protect personal privacy, but the events reported are all exactly as they happened with no embellishments, literary or otherwise. The incidents, although they sometimes may seem bizarre, are true, and the persons are real.

I include deductions and inferences which we have made on the basis of what we have seen, heard, and experienced, determined always to stay within a scriptural framework. Readers may agree or disagree with these conclusions and interpretations, but at least do consider them.

Keep in mind that we are not dealing with the everyday world which we see and know, but are rather catching brief glimpses into the sphere of the demonic. Here things not commonly imagined or fancied are definite realities, and spiritual laws operate, just as surely as physical laws operate in our more familiar universe.

Please do not rashly discard and reject something merely because it lies beyond the pale of your understanding or experience. As Hobart Freeman says, an hour or so in a room with a demonized person who is manifesting demons will do a great deal to rearrange and cancel out many theological theories that have no basis in fact or Scripture.

I do not propose to debate or argue the subject matter presented, only to report what has happened and what it seems to teach from our vantage point as soldiers of Jesus Christ. Actually, it is pointless to argue with anyone who has no practical, but only theoretical knowledge of the battle. An old military maxim states that the more you know of an enemy's tactics, his strengths and weaknesses, the more able you are to cope with him successfully on the battlefield. I feel most armchair tacticians would fare poorly in an actual encounter with the powers of darkness.

There is a desperate need now to throw the local churches of Jesus Christ onto a wartime footing. Cancel all the extraneous "leaves of absence," "tea parties," social and programming events, to get to the main business of giving basic training to soldiers, enabling them to endure hardness as good soldiers of Jesus Christ (II Timothy 2:3) and to stand fast in this evil day (Ephesians 6:13).

Paul wrote, by way of warning, "Lest Satan should get an advantage of us; for we are not ignorant of his devices" (II Corinthians 2:11). And he spoke of battling with "beasts at Ephesus" (I Corinthians 15:32), but not after the manner of men. We are involved in warfare, victims are falling by the thousands, and peacetime measures will not do. Jesus and the church He founded were rugged and strong, bringing a flaming, relevant message of salvation for the soul, healing for the body and mind, and full deliverance from even the most severe demonic bondage.

Too many churches today are a pale, anemic imitation of the real thing, whose members often end up fighting each other instead of the deadly hosts of hell (Galatians 5:15). Organizations which began as a blessing have sometimes remained to perpetuate themselves and justify their existence by endless meetings, conferences and the like, yet are utterly useless in this day of all-out spiritual warfare.

Money, time, talent and effort are absorbed in increasing quantities by efforts and organizations that yield little or no real spiritual profit.

We need believers who will throw all into the struggle to set people free of the awful bondage into which the world and even some Bible-believing churches have sunk. It is hellish. The Lord Jesus never intended that we should be occupied with such things when He comes. The call is loud and clear: Away with half measures! We must recover ourselves from the snare of the devil (II Timothy 2:26).

If you are considering emphasis on the deliverance ministry, know that you will be maligned by fellow Christians who have a limited understanding of spiritual warfare. Accusations will fly, and you will hear sneers that you are "finding demons behind every bush and in every person;" that you have "gone overboard, off the deep end about demons;" that you have "lost all perspective" and that you are a "demon chaser" and so forth.

Well-meaning persons will attack you savagely as one who has departed from the faith and descended into the worst kind of heresy and apostasy. Spend time in prayer, be sure of your Bible grounds, and then go ahead, regardless of criticism or calumny.

I agree with Dr. Zollar, "Demons fear exposure above all else. This explains the abuse, ridicule and hatred heaped upon the heads of the 'fanatics' who uncover them and expose them for what they are. Satan will leave no stone unturned to smear and vilify one who attacks his kingdom of darkness with the light of the truth and deliverance."[3]

Another and equally empty tactic which has many promoters is one the devil must have thoroughly enjoyed concocting. It comes in several guises, but the basic idea is that you should not talk about Satan and the evil spirits lest you get people's attention fastened on the devil and his

power, and thereby lose sight of Jesus and His work. Sometimes this comes in sweetness and light, by saying that just presenting Jesus and praising and worshipping Him is all there is to the gospel. Do not mention the devil at all.

According to this version, even talking about the devil and demons gives them power. Nothing could be further from the truth. Indeed, such a rule gives them the concealment they desire. Oh how we need in this day of apostasy and fierce spiritual warfare for men of God everywhere to arise and cry aloud because once more God's people are being "destroyed for a lack of knowledge" (Hosea 4:6).

The Second Corinthian letter was written to expose the methods and operation of Satan. These are: Blinding-II Corinthians 4:3, 4; Beguiling-II Corinthians 11:3; Buffeting-II Corinthians 12:7. Knowledge and truth have always armed God's people for combat, not disarmed them and made them helpless (II Corinthians 2:11). Jesus said: "Ye shall know the truth and the truth shall make you free" (John 8:32). In this headlong clash with the evil forces of the spirit world, what you don't know can and does hurt you. Know the truth; in it alone is liberty and protection.

How right Peterson is when he insists "The dangers in an excessive preoccupation with demonology are often exaggerated. Man's conquest of many preventable diseases is the consequence of a highly organized campaign of public information . . .The Christian is able to defeat the foe because he is '. . . not ignorant of his devices.'"[4] The persons most frightened by demons seem to know the least about them.

While there is valid reason for caution in this area, remember that the churches of Jesus Christ, alone in the world, possess authority and power to rout the forces of the devil and to cast out his evil spirits. Refusing to exercise this divinely-given prerogative has allowed the enemy to come in

like a flood through the unseen world to steal, kill, and destroy (John 10:10).

As Jesus said about tithing, "These (things) ye ought to have done, and not to leave the other undone" (Matthew 23:23). Thank God that when the enemy comes in like a flood, the Spirit of the Lord will raise up a standard against him (Isaiah 59:19), and that where sin abounds, there does grace much more abound (Romans 5:20).

Very, very few are working in this rich harvest field for the Lord Jesus. Even many who started out in this direction have forsaken the battle because of the heavy toll in casualties and personal attacks on themselves, their families, and their churches. No doubt the reason Satan has stationed so much of his heavy artillery along this road of deliverance for the captives is that it threatens a vital area of his work and program, long neglected by Christian workers.

Just as Peter did not have to fight his way through an eager crowd of volunteers in order to climb over the side of the boat to walk on the water to Jesus, so you will find little or no competition if you seek to enter the field of deliverance as a ministry for Jesus Christ. You will definitely find a heavy and determined opposition from Satan, designed to force your retreat. Be forewarned and expect this.

Through church people, other Christians, your own flesh, physical and mental pressures (on the job, at home), and attacks on and through your family, Satan will make known his sore displeasure with your course. It is only the Lord's mercies which prevent us from being consumed (Lamentations 3:22). If you have not counted the cost before plunging into the struggle, it can bring on spiritual fainting spells.

I can truthfully state that after being in the pastorate and other Christian work for twenty-eight years, I have never encountered such pressures and attacks by the forces of hell

as I have experienced since being thrust into this phase of the battle.

"You will reap in due season if you faint not." How often I have come home in the wee hours of the morning after some bitter battle and fallen into bed claiming this promise (Galatians 6:9). Under the pressures of opposition, I have seen many faint and fall away in defeat; but thanks be to God, I have seen far more go straight on, praising Jesus Christ Who always gives us the victory!

Yes, the fighting is dangerous, dirty, and fierce beyond anything you could imagine. But the rewards are lasting and the joy of seeing persons freed from awful oppression and bondage is a great reward, indeed. The freed ones who joyfully plunge into witnessing, Bible study, and begin cleaning up their lives, all the while radiating the peace and love of Jesus are certainly enough to cause you to ignore all the caustic comments and fiery barbs of the gainsayers, legalists and pious theologians.

As stated earlier, the go-into-all-the-world ministry of the New Testament church is to be at least three fold. We are to evangelize and win converts to Jesus Christ, to cast out demons, and to heal the sick. Essential to this is the baptism in the Holy Spirit and the charismatic gifts (Mark 16:17, 18; I Corinthians 12:1, 8;11).

It seems to me that to be fair, we ought to at least try for a full-orbed ministry in these areas where Jesus gave specific command. In the average Bible-believing church, there is a wall of unbelief and misunderstanding that prevents entering into and enjoying the blessings of the charismatic gifts. And even in many churches that have received the truth about the charismatic gifts and healing, there seems to be a similar block against deliverance from demon spirits.

God has, in His wisdom, given the gifts of the Holy Spirit to be utilized by His people for the defeat of the powers of the

satanic hordes. To ignore or neglect any one of these supernatural provisions is to be left with the defenses down in some vital area of spiritual conflict. This condition courts disaster in any encounter with the forces of evil. God in His economy included exactly what is necessary to cope with the devil, and we dare not try to get by without any one of these spiritual weapons.

How dangerous it is that the arch foe has so slyly deceived believers as a whole into thinking that some or most of the gifts of the Holy Spirit have been discontinued permanently because they are no longer necessary! It is little wonder that defeat and decay are so evident in the established churches, even in some fundamental Bible-believing groups. Even there, people seem to have lost sight of the fact that "the letter killeth, (II Corinthians 3:6), and that it is "Not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit, saith the Lord of hosts" (Zechariah 4:6).

Harper observes that it is not surprising that deliverance and healings are both neglected, for they go together (Matthew 8:16, 17). "In the gospels we are told that Jesus sometimes healed people by means of casting out an evil spirit. Thus He dealt with dumbness (Matthew 9:32, 33), blindness (Matthew 12:22), and deafness (Mark 9:25). It is surely significant that the senses seem particularly prone to attack in the gospel narrative. The explanation surely is that it is through the senses (speech, sight and hearing) that the gospel is largely communicated. No wonder the enemy will particularly attack these vital organs of the body."[5]

Physical blinding, with a concealed spiritual source, is one thing. Spiritual blinding is another, whether it be total, as in the unbeliever, or partial, as with some believers. Of people who claim to be champions of the Bible but who fight bitterly against the present-day work of the Holy Spirit, Pat Brooks writes, "Spiritual cataracts blind their eyes as they read

Scripture dealing with the third person of the Godhead (His powers and His gifts) and the many passsages in the Word demons. showing how Christ and His disciples dealt with Satan and the demons“

Behind the argument of the modern lack of any need for such gifts, this writer suspects a demonic source and observes that "it is futile to argue the point, for demons are irrational, their position irrevocable, and their final doom inevitable."[6]

It is sadly true that in Jesus' day, many of those with the greatest knowledge of God's Word were the greatest enemies of God's work. Today as the Holy Spirit is restoring His gifts to the church, many people who have solid Bible backgrounds have become determined and even bitter enemies of the movement, when they should be its most enthusiastic supporters. One is reminded of the elder son's jealousy and anger over the prodigal's return as God pours out His Spirit in the most unlooked-for places.

Once again, Jesus is bringing in the poor, the maimed, the halt, and the blind to His table because those who were first bidden have snubbed the gracious invitation. God has repeatedly by-passed many splendid, but unwilling, vessels and instead chosen unlikely people in whom He sees unlimited possibilities. The difference lies in their willingness to be used. God will not be thwarted by anyone. . . not by the devil, not even by His own disobedient children.

Consider the unlikely people whom God has chosen in the past. Peter, the cursing fisherman became the preacher of Pentecost; the harlot Samaritan woman at the well brought a whole town to Jesus' feet while His well-trained "seminarians" only brought a sack of sandwiches; Zacchaeus, as crooked as a barrel of fishhooks, became an honest man, dramatically demonstrating the change God makes in a life; a

shy but generous lad donated his lunch and fed a multitude; Paul, an arrogant, zealous, religious bigot became the prince of the apostles and an example of humility and self-sacrifice. The list is long.

Let those who systematically oppose anything and everything happening outside their theological framework examine God's Word more closely. In this book I attempt to detail how some of my ideas were changed. Without going to extremes, there is truth in the maxim: "The man with the experience is never at the mercy of the man with the argument." Many doubters and skeptics, once they attended our services, have been convinced of the reality of the spirit world and its manifestations. Audiovisual lessons backed by the Scriptures are hard to beat!

As Christians, we must avoid ruts in our thinking for a rut is just a grave that is open at both ends. At the same time we must not be "children, carried about with every wind of doctrine" (Ephesians 4:14). We should examine things thoroughly, to see if that which we or our churches have not previously experienced is found in God's Word, and belongs in God's plan for His people. Many of those who exclaim "You must never base your doctrine on experience!" have made the opposite error and have built their doctrine on their lack of experience, leaving them with a Bible full of "history" and "troublesome" passages. Remember, "All Scripture. . . is profitable for doctrine. . . "(II Timothy 3:16). Even Acts and I Corinthians! The abject fear of men, councils, and boards enslave many who should strike out boldly to discover the truth (Psalm 29:25).

Of the many who have come to our church and been convinced of the reality of spiritual warfare, both from the scriptures and from the evidence which they see and experience, some do not have the courage of their convictions. Because it is not customary and accepted in

their circles, they walk away sadly. Like the rich young ruler, they are rich and have many possessions, their prestige, their place of leadership, their comfortable salary, and their standing in the community or among the "brethren."

Much is said today about sacrifice and suffering on the behalf of the Lord Jesus. Are we rendering lip service, or do we mean it? Do we really want to walk the path our Lord Jesus Christ blazed 2,000 years ago? Be sure to count the cost before answering. Many times in the Scriptures real trouble and persecution came when demons were cast out.

Ponder the questions raised by Pat Brooks: Are you willing to have the Holy Spirit turn the searchlight of conviction upon you and your family in a new and more penetrating fashion? Are you ready for Him to expose in you every demonic connection and accommodation?

If you are not ready to surrender to the Lord to this extent, count the cost of not making this commitment. Maybe you are among those who feel hatred and resistance toward teachings about the demons and their activities. Keep in mind that the enemy also hates exposure. Indwelling demons express, through their host, their anger and fear at being found out!

As Mrs. Brooks so aptly puts it, "Waiting on God with every pretense put aside, we can ask Him these hard, searching questions: Could it be that I have been wrong, all these years? Could it be that what I have thought to be sound teaching has been interwoven with a demonic thread of unbelief? Have I really obeyed your Word, Lord, or have I siphoned off that part which will make me despicable in man's eyes? Have I lost the fear of displeasing You through the awful fear of man which Your Word says brings a snare? (Proverbs 29:25).

"Is it more worthwhile to keep my image-and the satanic bondages in me and my family-or to throw caution to the

winds and be ridiculed as a tongue-speaker, a demon-driver, and a faith healer? Am I ready for that kind of honesty You really want in family relationships which demonic deception has conveniently hidden? What will happen to me if I resist Your perfecting work, Lord, as you get rid of the spots and blemishes in all of us? Can I risk facing Your return without the oil of Your Spirit brilliantly radiating light to all I meet?"[7]

For a solution to the conflict between our theological "prejudices and the revealed will of God," the statement of Jesus in John 7:17 is the great key: "If any man is willing to do His will, he shall know of the teaching, whether it is of God, or whether I speak from myself."

[1]From Demons at Work in the World Today by Donald R. Jacobs, copyright 1972 by Herald Press, Scottsdale, Pa., 15683. Reprinted by permission. p. 19.

[2]Ibid., p. 20.

[3]From Demons, Their Origin, Their Work, Their End by Dr. John Zollar, copyright 1972 by Christ for Everyone, New Era, Mich. p. 22. Used by permission.

[4]From Are Demons for Real? by Robert Peterson, copyright by Overseas Miss. Fellowship, Moody Press, Chicago. Used by permission. p. 113.

[5]From Spiritual Warfare by Michael Harper, copyright by Michael Harper 1970, Plainfield, N.J. 07060. Reprinted by permission. p. 90.

[6]From Out in the Name of Jesus by Pat Brooks, copyright 1972 by Creation House, Carol Stream, Ill. Used by permission. p. 207.

[7]Ibid., pp. 207, 208.

Chapter 3

THE FLESH . . . . OR THE DEVIL?

"For this purpose the Son of God was manifested that He might destroy the works of the devil" (1 John 3:8). "Jesus went about....healing all that were oppressed of the devil. (Acts 10:38). He came to "open blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house , to preach the gospel to the poor to heal the brokenhearted... to preach deliverance to the captives, and. . . . to set at liberty them that are bruised (Isaiah 42:7; Luke 4:18).

How sad it is then that the ministry of loosing the captives has been so neglected. Much of the fruit which should accrue to the Lord through His born-again believers will never come to pass, because of demonic bondage and interference. Much more tragic is the fact that so often the reasons for the failures in believers are not even suspected. Those who deny that any born-again person can have a demon can never find the reason for the chronic failures in their own lives and in the lives of those to whom they minister.

For many years I ministered in the pastorate and evangelism, and I marveled that so many eager, sincere babes in Christ would begin so very well, but flounder and finally fail in misery and dejection. I faithfully taught them I John 1:9 as a means of restoring broken fellowship caused by tripping up in sin.

I further taught them the truths about the dual nature of the believer after salvation, the reality of the old sin nature, its incorrigibility, and inability to be subject to God (Romans 6:6).

I gave them verses which would help them to have victory, such as: I Corinthians 10:13; John 16:24; I John 4:4.

Some grew and flourished and did quite well. Yet in so many cases, aspiring babes in Christ with great potential for spiritual things held up only briefly, and then were dashed to defeat again and again. This often led to despair and many times they gave up trying to follow the Lord altogether.

I was puzzled by what I saw happening, far too often to be accidental. I was not alone. I found other pastors facing a similar dilemma. I did not then know with the certainty I now possess that, if the sin and failing in the believer is caused by the old sin nature, then I John 1:9, used sincerely and honestly will restore fellowship; but if the failure is due to the working of an evil spirit, no amount of confessing and forsaking will force him to leave. Once he is entrenched in body, mind, or spirit, he must be cast out in the name of Jesus Christ, and even then this can only be accomplished in willing individuals.

There are two chief causes for our inner conflicts and problems. Paul refers to the first as the "flesh" or the "old man." I know that some believe that through some religious exercise or program of "sanctification" we can lose forever this troublesome legacy from Adam. I cannot find such an eradication of the sin nature in the Bible, however. These people might profit from reading H. A. Ironsides, Holiness: The True and the False. I also have never met a proponent of this theory who had achieved its lofty goals. Paul, writing late in life, speaks of keeping his body under subjection. In I Corinthians 9:27, The Living Bible, he states: "Like an athlete I punish my body, treating it roughly, training it to do what it should, not what it wants to." In his "swan song" written to Timothy he also stated that he had not yet attained his goal (II Timothy 4:7).

If the great apostle did not eliminate or eradicate his sin nature with all of his gifts, revelations and unquestioned understanding of the mind of God, I feel it to be a great

waste of time to try and theologize ourselves free from the terrible truth. WE HAVE A SIN NATURE! and will have it until the day that the Lord Jesus bestows upon us our new resurrection bodies (purchased at Calvary) and we shall indeed be like Him in every respect (I Corinthians 15:52; Philippians 3:21). Until that happy day, we must be alert to a carnal, unregenerate nature which is enmity against God and is the ready ally of the satanic forces which attack us (Romans 8:7).

The other prime cause for these inner battles is the presence of satanic emissaries, evil spirits who are fallen angels. The demons will attempt to fasten upon some area of the fleshly mind and body and move in to exercise control and domination over that facet of the personality or life. As someone has well said, they will invade when given the opportunity and will not leave without being forcibly evicted. They bring much suffering, misery and unhappiness into the life of the indivduals they plague.

According to Dr. Zollar, "Everyone of us has a weak spot, a place in our makeup where we have a weakness, a place where we would be most liable to accept the suggestions given by a demon. It could be drink, drugs, lust in its different and various forms, money, fame, the occult, or anything else. Demons are very wise; they know what suggestions you would be most likely to accept, so pressure is put at this point."[1]

"The demon, knowing the suggestion he believes you will accept, makes an appeal to your mind. Your mind (intellect) is the door to your spirit. When you willingly and gladly do what the demon wants you to do, then you have opened the door to your mind and the demon will enter and take control."[2] The degree of control can be partial on up to total.

"This hold on a person even firm resistance cannot break," Harper writes. "Invasion and/or occupancy bring one under

the control of an evil spirit in some areas of the life. In these latter cases, the aid of other believers must be invoked to loose the person and cast out the troubling spirits."[3]

The Bible reveals that Satan may seduce a child of God away from the protection of the blood of Jesus, entice him to miss God's will, and drive him on to death, perhaps through suicide. When Satan, with his demonic spirits, gains control of some phase of the Christian's life, the believer will become confused and defeated and must seek help (I Timothy 4:1; II Corinthians 12:7; I Thessalonians 2:18; Ephesians 6:11, 12; II Corinthians 2:11; 1 Peter 5:8).

As in every spiritual matter, the Word of God holds the complete answer to solving these two problems. The old fleshly nature, inherited from Adam, must be put into the position of death. "Our old man was crucified with Him (Christ) likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead. . . they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts (Romans 6:11; Galatians 5:24). This surrender must not only be once and for all, but renewed daily. Paul said "I die daily." So must we, to be victorious over the indwelling sin nature (I Corinthians 15:31).

The answer to the problem of evil spirits is to cast them out in Jesus' name (Mark 5:8; 16:18; Acts 8:7). One remedy cannot be substituted for the other. You cannot cast out the old man (sin nature); neither will it avail to try to reckon the demon to be dead.

I John 1:9, "If we confess our sin, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sin and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness," will adequately take care of failures arising from the old Adamic nature and its weaknesses. Use it conscientiously and sincerely for restoring fellowship broken with God because of sin in the believer's life. However, it has no effect in dislodging demons. Its use doubtless makes them uncomfortable and might even subdue their

manifestations for a time. But weeping and confessing of sin will not remove a demon with a foothold in the body and/or mind of the believer.[4]

God put a curse on the serpent but gave him a promise (Genesis 3:14) "And the Lord God said to the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field, upon thy belly shalt thou go, and DUST SHALT THOU EAT all the days of thy life." To man, God said, "In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken; for DUST THOU ART, and unto dust shalt thou return' (Genesis 3:19).

Thus, the first Adam, now fallen, is declared to be dust, of the earth, earthy. As such he is the rightful food for the serpent (Satan). These terms have to be symbolic and spiritual in regard to Satan. Snakes do not eat dirt, but Satan does feed on the Adamic nature. As long as man remains in his fallen state, he is under the dominion of Satanic powers, until he claims victory through the work of Jesus on the cross.

You may wonder why Satan is allowed to put afflictions on you, tempt you, torment your mind. It is because you are still bearing at least a portion of that image of the first Adam, the man of dust, and dust is the serpent's food. He has a right to feed on you as long as you have that old dust nature. Starve the serpent by feeding the new man and mortifying the flesh (the old man) giving the serpent little to feed on (Romans 8:13; I Thessalonians 5:23; I Corinthians 7:1).

[1]From Demons, Their Origin, Their Work, Their End by Dr. John Zollar, copyright 1972 by Christ for Everyone, New Era, Mich. Used by permission. p. 50.

[2]Ibid., p. 54.

[3]From Spiritual Warfare, by Michael Harper, copyright 1970 by Michael Harper, Plainfield, N.J. 07060. Used by permission. p. 104.

[4]From How to be Delivered from Demon Bondage (tract) Full Gospel Assembly, Shaker Hgts., Ohio. Used by permission.

Chapter 4

WHAT ABOUT DEMONS IN CHRISTIANS?

"In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when you are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, to deliver such an one to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus" (I Corinthians 5:4, 5). The apostle here deals with the case of a disobedient and sinful believer in the church at Corinth. In verse 10 of the same chapter he specifically emphasizes that he is speaking not about evildoers of the world but in the church. He makes that clear again in verse 12.

In another case, Paul writes: "Holding faith, and a good conscience; which some having put away concerning faith have made shipwreck: of whom in Hymenaeus and Alexander, whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme" (I Timothy 1:19, 20).

"In meekness, instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth; And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will" (II Timothy 2:25, 26).

When you go into the ministry of casting out demons, inevitably you are challenged by the question, "Is it possible for a born-again believer to have a demon?" In charismatic circles the question is: “Is it possible for a believer who is baptized in the Spirit to have a demon?"

"Absolutely not!" comes the stock answer. "The Holy Spirit cannot coexist in the same body with a demon!" This answer is designed to shut off all further inquiry, to close the mind even to the possibility as unthinkable. It is invoked with the insistence of a slogan. Yet it is not a Scriptural answer. It is

an extra-Scriptural piece of logic that stands quite by itself. The often-heard statement does not rest on Scripture; it rests on an assumption.

Actually, the answer to both questions above is definitely "yes." It is a particularly dangerous delusion to think that Satan, or the demons, adopt any kind of a hands-off policy toward believers. In fact, they affect and afflict believers as far as possible, they buffet them, oppose them, seek to tempt or deceive them or lead them astray. They look for, and quickly seize, any advantage to hinder believers.

Almost one hundred percent of the deliverance ministry we have had has been among the born-again believers, and most of them were baptized-in-the-Spirit Christians also. Being saved, and even being baptized in the Holy Spirit is no guarantee against the inroads of the evil spirits. They are by no means automatically disposed of through these or subsequent spiritual experiences, although they may have been rendered temporarily inactive or unable to function. There is always a possibility of a "revival" of their power during times of stress and pressure, so long as they are present. This explains the necessity of removing them completely.

Several arguments are advanced to "prove" that under no circumstances can a born-again person have a demon. The most common statement is that a Christian cannot be "possessed." This will be discussed later as a misnomer. The arguments in summary run something like this:

1. The believer is inhabited by the Holy Spirit; therefore the demons cannot coexist within the same body. The proof text usually used is I Corinthians 2:12; however the verse does not say this.

2. Jesus came to destroy the works of the devil (1 John 3:8), and indeed He did. In the case of problems caused by

demons, the remedy and method of doing this is cast out the demons in His name.

3. The struggle inside the believer is always revealed to be the struggle between the flesh and the Spirit, and not a struggle involving demons (Romans 6 and 7). Were that the case, the conscientious claiming of the promises of God would solve every human problem.

4. The believer is delivered from the power of Satan and his demons (Colossians 1:12, 13; Ephesians 2:1-3). Yes, but like many other promises, not automatically, but only as we voluntarily meet God's conditions for deliverance.

5. The Christian is provided with complete protection from the fiery darts of the enemy (Ephesians 6). This overlooks the rather obvious fact that the armor is designed for defense from external, not internal enemies, and also that even so the believer's armor is not always in place.

In spite of these arguments, the dismaying fact remains that born-again Christians, including leaders, are having difficulties and problems which can find no solution in natural infirmities or the endless conflict between the flesh and the Spirit.

It is no secret that many have become discouraged and filled with awful despair. Some have dropped by the wayside, and some have even commited suicide in their desperation and inability to find a solution within the framework of their theological understandings.

In his tract, "Demon Activity and the Christian," Ernest B. Rockstad rightly concludes that: "Experience, of course is not the basis for the interpretation of the Bible. Nevertheless, if consistent experiences run counter to an interpretation, the dedicated seeker after truth will set out to find the reason. He must be willing to re-study his interpretation under the direction of the Holy Spirit. . . and be prepared to make any necessary corrections in his own

beliefs so as to be in full agreement with the facts as they are." He further points out that understanding the biblical doctrine of human depravity should cause one to wonder that the Holy Spirit would enter a person under any circumstances.

You cannot argue anyone into believing that the old fundamental stand against Christians having demons is fallacious. Donald Jacobs illustrates it this way: "There once lived a skeptical fisherman who heard unbelievable stories about people catching fish two feet long. He had never caught one over twelve inches. One day he caught one three feet long, held it by the tail, shook his head, threw it back into the water and said, 'Just another lie.' Likewise, faced with the evidence of a 'real live demon,' a western man would probably react just about this way. "There are just no such things,' he would say." [1]

There is an excellent presentation of the whole question in Don Basham's book, *Can A Christian Have A Demon?* Non-charismatic writers like Frances Manuel, Merrill Unger, Mark Bubeck, and Robert Peterson also teach that a Christian can have a demon.

In his very balanced and scholarly treatise, *Demons in the World Today*, Dr. Unger writes, "In demon influence, evil spirits exert power over a person short of actual possession. Such influence may vary from mild harassment to extreme subjection *when body and mind become dominated and held in slavery* by spirit agents. Christians, as well as non-Christians, can be so influenced. They may be oppressed, vexed, depressed, hindered and bound by demons." [2]

Dr. Unger is frank to say that he had written in 1952, "To demon possession, only unbelievers are exposed." Twenty years later, he writes: "This statement was inferred, since Scripture does not clearly settle the question. It was based *on the assumption* that an evil spirit could not indwell the

redeemed body together with the Holy Spirit."[3] (Italics added in both quotations.) Missionaries from all over the world wrote to him, telling of cases to the contrary and, as the author notes, the claims of the missionaries "appear valid."

Hobart Freeman points out that "as a result of erroneous teaching and beliefs, which are based neither upon Scripture or experience, Satan has deluded many concerning the question, can a Christian be oppressed by Satan or possess evil spirits? . . . Can one who has never participated actively in any form of occultism be subjected or oppressed?"

The answer to both questions is yes, supported both from the Scriptures and experience. Believers can be oppressed, vexed, depressed, hindered, bound, and afflicted by Satan or suffer infestation by demonic spirits.[4] Dr. Freeman goes on to discuss the difference between full possession (where the life and will come totally under the domination and control of Satan) and the invasion of the mind or body by spirits of infirmity, fear, resentment, doubt, depression, and so forth. This condition he terms infestation, which is aptly descriptive.

Derek Prince in his helpful pamphlet, "Expelling Demons,' explains facts linguistically which should help unsnarl the semantic tangle. "The New Testament Greek word for demon is *daimonion* in the King James Version often translated 'devil.' Associated in the New Testament with the noun *daimonion* is the passive verb *daimonizomai*. The literal meaning of this verb is 'to be demoned,' that is, in some way under the influence or power of demons. In the King James Version this verb is usually translated by some phrase such as 'to be possessed' or 'to be vexed' by demons or by evil spirits. However, there is *no distinction* in the original Greek text to support these (translated) distinctions."[5] We dare not rest a theological distinction about the work of demons on a distinction in language which does not exist in the original.

Believers were definitely subjected to demonic attack in the Scriptures. The physical afflictions and other disasters of Job are shown to be Satan's work in Job 1 and 2. In the synagogue there was a man with an unclean spirit (Mark 1:23). A woman called "a daughter of Abraham" (Father of the faithful) was bound with a spirit of infirmity for eighteen years (Luke 13:11- 16).

There is no reason to conclude arbitrarily in the two latter cases that the persons involved were not believers. In II Timothy 2:23-26, where Paul discusses contention and disputings over doctrine, believers are indicated who have evidently slipped and need to "recover themselves from the snare of the devil, who are taken captive of him at his will.

A member of the church in Corinth seems to have been overcome by a spirit of lust (I Corinthians 5:1-5). Jesus rebuked a spirit of fever in Peter's mother-in-law (Luke 4:38-39) and he left her and she was well. In Mark 3:33 and Mark 9:25, Jesus uses this same term to rebuke Satan. Sickness is described as an oppression of the devil in Acts 10:38 and Jesus often healed by removing spirits of infirmity, which are simply another method of Satanic attack (See Luke 4:40, 41).

Consider Peter, who one moment spoke by Divine revelation, declaring that Jesus was the very Christ, and in the next moment was reprimanded by Jesus, who rebuked Satan in him, saying "thou savorest not the things that be of God" (Matthew 16:13-23). Simon the magician is presented as one who believed and was baptized, but had evidently not been delivered from his occult bondage and was commanded to repent and pray (Acts 8:20-24). How did Satan manage to "fill the heart" of the believers Ananias and Sapphira? (Acts 5:3) Paul himself reports that he suffered buffeting from a "messenger of Satan" (II Corinthians 12:7).[6]

Dr. V. Raymond Edman, the late president of Wheaton College, wrote the following in answer to a question as to whether or not a Christian could have a demon: The unguarded Christian may have demon possession in the soul, which would affect mental processes and emotions; or in the body, as was the case of the woman who had a 'spirit of infirmity eighteen years and was bowed together, and could in nowise lift up herself" (Luke 13:11). Of her, the Saviour said when He healed her, 'Ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?' To say that a Christian cannot be demonized in any area of his life is a happy but inaccurate generalization."[7]

Paul reproves the Corinthian Christians for receiving another spirit than the Spirit they had previously received (II Corinthians 11:4). This is a case in which the language of the King James translation does not fully convey the force of the original. The Phillips translation says: "For apparently you cheerfully accept a man who comes to you preaching a different Jesus than the one we told you about, and you readily receive a spirit and a gospel quite different from the ones you originally accepted." Or, as the Living Bible puts it, "You swallow it all."

Paul inquired, in Galatians 3:1, about who had bewitched the believers to draw them away from the truth. The effects upon them were not just the effects of wrong mental impressions conveyed by false teachers but were the effects of evil spirits imposing false doctrine through false teachers. These references emphatically do not suggest that believers enjoy an easy exemption from the activities of devils but are particulary targeted by them.

Robert Peterson makes an interesting comment: "It appears that the full force of deceiving spirits is directed against the spiritual believer in doctrinal rather than worldly matters,

although the latter may be used after the believer has been ensnared by the more subtle means. In I Timothy 4:1 and 2 the Apostle Paul gives a full account of how wicked spirits attack the spiritual believer and by deception beguile him away from the faith through the use of false prophets."[8] This passage begins: "Now the Spirit speaks expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils."

Don Basham sums up the matter when he writes that there is an "almost universal sense of fear and loathing toward the whole subject of Satan and the evil spirits. Many believers have adopted the fallacious idea that if they ignore Satan, he will ignore them. Scripturally, such a position is indefensible" (I Peter 5:8, 9; James 4:7, II Corinthians 2:11).[9]

When the power of God begins to move in a person's life, he quite naturally becomes an object for the devil's most crippling attacks. This should not bring despair or fear to the believer, for the power of God is greater than all the power of the devil.

The unreasoning fear of demons is fostered and promoted by Satan and his hosts directly. It prevents intelligent interference with their program, keeping it shrouded in darkness and mystery. I have personally seen case after case where people who became disturbed, upset and genuinely frightened at the mention of casting out demons were later delivered of demons. After this, they became fearless and enthusiastic warriors in the fight to free others who are bound.

Basham concludes that a Christian can be tormented or afflicted by evil spirits in some area of his life and still be a sincere Christian; just as he can be tormented by physical sickness and still be a sincere Christian.[10]

It is always a blessing to see truths, not mere speculations, in print concerning spiritual warfare. Satan never misses an

opportunity to pound away at you, arguing that the majority must be right and accusing you of having gone off your "theological rocker" to become involved in anything so controversial, which is so actively and determinedly opposed by a great majority of the professing brethren. How reassuring to hear now and then from a brother who is discovering some of the same truths and insights which you have received.

I shudder when I hear someone remark skeptically, "Well, I just can't believe that. I'd have to see it first." They seek to shield themselves by mere ignorance! Be careful, you may well experience manifestations in yourself or in your immediate family to chasten you. I believe Satan is sometimes enraged when people doubt that he is able to provoke all of the wild and outlandish manifestations of demons in a deliverance session and I am convinced that if someone is sneering at the idea that the devil can work in certain fashions, they may find out the hard way in personal or family consequences.

For myself, I had no real problem believing in a personal devil and in the fact that demons can infest both lost and saved as they have opportunity. Therefore, when I first ran into a storm of questions and angry abuse about the subject (after we began casting demons from afflicted Christians), I had to go back through the Bible to think through the truths God had given to me. Over and over the scandalized cry came, "You can't do that!"

To me it was as foolish as telling Peter he could not walk on the water when he was already doing it. It was as pointless as the demon who indignantly informed me that I could not come against him. He was annoyed when I pointed out that I was already doing it and that he was powerless to stop me. It is like trying to prove the sky is blue on a clear day or that water is wet. Such self-evident truths, but so difficult to

show to those who are predisposed to disbelieve them. Amazing, too, for many of the critics are well-versed in many crucial doctrinal matters in Scripture. How sad that Satan has managed to hoodwink them in this vital area.

When a person is born again by confessing his sin and asking the Lord Jesus Christ to come into his heart and save him (Romans 3:23, 24; 6:23; Revelation 3:20), he is received by the Father and salvation comes instantaneously in the experience of the new birth. Love, joy, and peace are the initial, logical byproducts.

The Holy Spirit comes to indwell and seal the believer as God's earnest of redemption (Ephesians 1:13, 14) and His abiding presence is guaranteed until the believer is redeemed (in point of time) completely by being taken to be with the Lord, whether it be through the door of death, or through the door in the sky (I Thessalonians 4:16, 17).

The Holy Spirit therefore inhabits the body of the believer in a peculiar and special way in these days since Pentecost, when the Holy Spirit was poured out on the assembled believers. The child of God (John 1:12) is accepted in the Beloved, Jesus, (Ephesians 1:6) and blessed with the assurance of God's presence and blessing (John 10:28-30).

In spite of these wonderful changes, however, a week will scarcely pass in a babe's life (assuming he follows the Lord in Bible study and prayer), that he will not be convicted of some sin of omission or commission (James 4:17), which must be confessed (I John 1:9) and put away (Proverbs 28:13). This will continue indefinitely as long as the believer is growing in grace and in the knowledge of the Lord Jesus Christ.

Many of these sins of omission and commission were present at the time of conversion and some will lie unnoticed by the believer for months, until the Lord deals with them. The Holy Spirit is able to coexist with these unconfessed

sins. Why then is it so difficult to accept the fact that the Holy Spirit is able to also coexist with indwelling demons until they are detected, hated, renounced, and expelled in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ?

[1]From Demons at Work in the World Today by Donald R. Jacobs, copyright 1972 by Herald Press, Scottsdale, Pa., 15683. Reprinted by permission. p. 38.

[2]From Demons in the World Today, by Merrill F. Unger, copyright 1971 by Tyndale House Pub., Wheaton, Ill., 60187. p. 113.

[3]Ibid., p. 117.

[4]From Angels of Light by Hobart Freeman, copyright 1969 by Logos International, Plainfield, N.J. 07060. Reprinted by permission. pp. 73, 74.

[5]From Expelling Demons by Derek Prince, copyright by Derek Prince Publications, Ft. Lauderdale, Fla. Used by permission. p. 4.

[6]Freeman, op. cit., p. 75.

[7]From Alliance Witness by V. Raymond Edmond, April 26, 1967, Vol. 102, #9, p. 22.

[8]From Are Demons For Real? by Robert Peterson, copyright 1968 by Overseas Miss. Fellowship, Moody Press, Chicago. Used by permission. p. 98.

[9]From Can a Christian Have a Demon? by Don Basham, copyright 1971 by Whitaker Books, Monroeville, Pa. Used by permission. p. 51.

Chapter 5

MUSIC AND DEMONS

Ezekiel 28:13: "Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God the workmanship of thy tabrets and thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created.

This passage, which is both prophetic and revelatory, tells of a created being (the "anointed cherub") who is described as "perfect in thy ways...till iniquity was found in thee" in short, the fallen angel Lucifer. A tabret is a small drum played to accompany a flute or other pipe, so in this case both the drums and the pipes were built in. Even today the human voice is often spoken of, particularly in regard to great singers, as a pipe.

Dr. Chafer wrote that, "This angel was created to be a diadem of praise to his Creator. Tabrets and pipes were prepared in him. He did not need an instrument of praise to glorify his Creator; he was a living diadem of praise."[1] In other words, Lucifer was, in one sense, the living expression and master of music from the beginning of his career. *He has not lost this ability to create and promote music.* Through his fall, however, it has become twisted, depraved and destructive, as have all his other God-given innate abilities and talents. He has taken what was meant to glorify God and has turned it to opposite uses. His total purpose now is to steal, to kill and to destroy (John 10:10), and he bends his many powers to accomplish that end, including his musical powers.

Your response to music is as individual as your fingerprints and is a matter of your makeup and environment. One of the most universal characteristics of music is its ability to affect the moods and emotions and to change the atmosphere into which it is introduced. Speaking strictly from the natural

standpoint, a psychologist reports that, in researching the peak experiences in human life, music ranked second only to sex in producing these heights. "Music is the stuff which is in and of itself the most powerful stimulant known among the perceptual processes . . . Music operates on our emotional faculty with greater intensiveness and rapidity than the product of any other act."

Music can measurably affect the pulse rate and the blood pressure. It can also increase the secretions of the energy producing and pain fighting glands in the body. It can thus affect digestion, reduce or delay muscular fatigue, increase muscular strength. It can also lift the soul and spirit.

During World War II, some soldiers came out of battle situations so profoundly shocked that they would not, or could not, speak a word. When other means failed to unlock their silence, their exposure to carefully selected music restored their speech.

In *The Doctor Prescribes Music*, the writer Podolsky explains that because the roots of the auditory nerves are "more widely distributed and have more extensive connections than those of any other nerves in the body. . . there is scarcely a function of the human body which may not be affected by musical tones.

John Hagee says "Music can express moods as clearly as words and sometimes communicate much better than speech. It can be calm and peaceful, causing a tranquil feeling, or caustic and violent as an expression of revolt. The moods, attitudes and reactions of mankind can easily be controlled by the right kind of music . . Satan could not afford to overlook this powerful tool to communicate his feelings to man. Music in the seventies has turned from the harmonious to the millennium for the untalented."[2]

Rock and Roll Music

An outstanding feature of rock music is the unprecedented emphasis given to rhythmic beat. This overemphasis on rhythm can have a devastating, hypnotic effect on listeners. The extremely high volume of electronically amplified rock music has actually damaged hearing permanently in some cases.

Former Rock and Roll musician Bob Larson analyzes the music: "By its very beat and sound it has always implicitly rejected restraints and celebrated freedom and sexuality. With its repetition, pulsated and syncopated rhythms, rock and roll numbs the senses and induces a state of moral oblivion. The beat of rock, with amplified intensity, encourages a feeling of complete abandonment of accepted social behavior. The electronic insistence of guitars accompanied by the neurotic throbbing of drums compels the shedding of inhibitions. The cacophonous sound of rock, often performed beyond the auditory threshold of pain, literally assaults the listener and immerses him in a physically sensuous experience. In this condition his mind is easy prey for the lyrics of rock songs!" (See Testimonies)

"The lyrics ridicule religion and make mockery of that which is sacred. They glorify promiscuous sex and invite immediate and complete physical and emotional self-indulgence. They promote hallucinogenic drugs and advocate the supposed euphoria of marijuana . . . change, wildness, sexual freedom and rebellion against all civil and moral authority."[4]

Hagee reports that "Much of the music being produced today lends itself exclusively to the drug culture. Rock festivals held in cow pastures with nothing to offer but noise and drugs are a smashing success . . . Many performers. . . live openly immoral lives. These acid-head freaked-out

purveyors of pornography perform with cheap theatricalism and blatant sexual exhibitionism“ [5]

Larson correctly states, "Unlike the spoken word which must be mentally translated to be interpreted, music can affect one on a physical level . . . Rock is the first popular music ever written, not to be heard, but to be felt. Consequently it must be amplified at high volume levels. It actually provides a tactile sensation to the human body. It is not the melody line or the chromatic arrangement of the chords that is important, but rather the beat that is absolutely essential to rock and roll." "This music does not breed contentment but revolution and destruction of self. Self destruction of any description is the hallmark of satanic ministry . . . The mesmerising music and the use of drugs to escape into a fantasy world opens the human body and mind to a dimension beyond its capacity to endure. The end result is physical ruin and emotional disorders medical science cannot cure."[6]

Much of rock music deliberately glorifies drugs and drugs have been a way of life for many rock heroes. Recently they were a way of death for rock singer Janis Joplin and, perhaps indirectly, for Jimi Hendrix.

Alex Lackey observes, "Such songs on sex as 'Let's Do It In The Road,' 'Light My Fire,' 'Let's Spend The Night Together,' 'Wet Dream Over You,' and 'Group Grope,' are common on the record and song-hit music market. Examples of others that are intended to break down moral barriers, and lead to experimenting in drugs are: 'Rainy Day Woman' (rain refers to heroin), 'Buy For Me Rain,' 'Colored Rain,' 'Blue Cheer' (LSD), 'Bend Me, Shape Me,' 'Magic Carpet Ride.'

"In the recording "The End,' produced by a group known as The Doors, a youth is described approaching his parents' room saying: 'Father,' 'Yes, Son.' 'Father, I want to kill you.' The statement concerning his intentions for his mother

would be unprintable. A member of one group, The Mothers Of Invention, has stated that a teenager can get the same effect from music that he can from dope. The groups themselves frankly admit that their music pushes narcotics and illicit sex.

"Rock bands say that they know they can cause a riot any time they want to. John Phillips, of the Mamas and the Papas, admitted that 'by carefully controlling the sequence of rhythms, anybody can create audience hysteria.' Other groups boast that they can, at will, 'turn on the chicks.' Admittedly, this is followed by drinking, smoking pot, and illicit sex."[7]

I have condensed an analysis of Jesus Christ Superstar, given by Pastor Vernon Lyons of Chicago:

People ignorant of the Scriptures make an ideal market for this pseudo-Christian musical production. Repeatedly the lyrics and story of the production runs counter to the Scriptures. Judas is made to say, "They think they've found the new Messiah and they'll hurt you when they find they're wrong." However, Judas did believe that Jesus was Messiah (Matthew 27:4).

Jesus is made to say he is crazy. "I must be mad . I must be out of my head! My name will mean nothing ten minutes after I'm dead." Yet he never at any time said any such thing and Peter declared the opposite in Acts 4:12: "Neither is there salvation in any other, for there is no other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved." The man in the opera is made to say further, "I have changed, I am not as sure as when we started," but there is no record of Jesus changing and the Bible states flatly "Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, today and forever" (Hebrews 13:8). The opera actor also asks "Why should I die?" another contradiction of Jesus who stated that He knew and accepted the fact that He had come to die (Mark 10:45). When

hanging on the cross Jesus is made to ask "Who is my mother, where is my mother?" but the Bible states that He knew who she was and where she was (John 19:26, 27).

There is also a colossal blunder of confusing Mary of Bethany with Mary Magdalene, and there is no excuse for this. It has to be deliberate. The Jesus Christ of this play does not present the Christ of the Bible at all. He is presented as sending away sick ones harshly saying "Heal yourselves." He changes, is unsure of His mission, and afraid. He is made to say "If I only knew."

There is a subtle turn in this story which makes Judas the star and Jesus Christ a bungler. In the opening lines, it is Judas who warns Jesus, denies His deity and says He should have stayed in a carpenter shop in Nazareth. It is he who sits in judgment on the company Christ keeps and how He spends His time. He says of Jesus, "He's just a man," says He lived at the wrong time and in the wrong place and accuses Him of letting things "get so out of hand."

In closing lines he links Jesus with Buddah and Mahomet. Jesus is confused, but Judas has a clear mind. What blasphemous misrepresentation of the truth.[8]

Christian or Jesus Rock Music

Many people endorse so-called "Christian Rock" or "Jesus Rock." I am forced to disagree and to warn that because rock music has its roots in the occult rhythms and demon worship ceremonies of the Eastern mystery religions it is innately evil and demon laden. After having talked with many Rock and Roll demons, having fought them to liberate their captives and having heard their vile rejection of Jesus Christ and anything sacred, I shake my head in amazement. Where does the discernment lie in Christian leaders who would endorse anything so plainly linked with evil?

A demon we recently dealt with gloated that young people in many places were still in bondage because the demons had them bound in "Christian" rock. He cackled as he ridiculed the unguarded gullibility of pastors and youth leaders who are so ignorant as to think that because the lyrics are religious that the music is good. He related gleefully that evil spirits were able to enter into the bodies of young people at a large Christian youth rally in Chicago because of the rock music which was played. He described the enjoyment and the strength he and the other demons received at such a performance. The demon also thoroughly enjoyed certain gospel quartets with their throbbing beat music. He enjoyed hearing them since in the guise of religious gospel music, many people were being infiltrated by spirits. Angrily he vetoed the music at our church (traditional hymns and strongly evangelical songs and choruses), said it made him sick and he just couldn't get any enjoyment from it. *He constantly affirmed that the beat, not the words, was important to the winning of dominance by the spirits.*

To the intelligently spiritual individual, there can be no question that the rock music front represents a broad invasion of American life by a thoroughly demonic philosophy under the convenient guise of the popular music of the day! How unwise it is, then, to blur the line between what belongs to the Lord and what belongs to the devil by borrowing from the rock culture.

Rock music, no matter what guise it assumes, is satanic in its origin and is off limits for the Christian who wants to stay clean for the Lord. As always, on matters of importance, the Word of God has clear-cut teaching on what is right and edifying. Here is some that applies to music:

Psalm 40:3 "And He hath put a new song in my mouth, even praise unto our God: Many shall see it and fear and shall trust in the Lord."

Acts 16:25 "And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them."

Psalm 104:33, 34 "I will sing unto the Lord as long as I live; I will sing praise to my God while I have my being. My meditation of Him shall be sweet."

Satan in the Classics?

One night, when I confronted a demon demanding his name, he stated that there were two, naming Devilish Music and Devilish Dancing. It was near the end of a session with a young man that had already lasted five hours. Hundreds of evil spirits had already left him. The manifestation of these two was by writhing and twisting on the floor like a snake, all the time with an evil leer distorting the face. Devilish Dancing had come in as a result of a class in modern dance at the university the summer before, along with spirits of sensuality and lasciviousness.

After this spirit and his cohorts left, I talked with Devilish Music. He told me proudly that he had opened the door for Loneliness, Depression, Misery, Apathy, Despair, Emptiness, Hopelessness, and Suicide. When I asked where he had come from, he answered "from some of the music of Rimski-Korsakov, Tchaikowsky, and Rachmaninoff." I later learned that the young man had been strangely fascinated by the works of these three men and had played some of their more melancholy works for hours, although it depressed him greatly.

Clapping and Rhythm: Joy or Mayhem?

As a Charismatic Baptist Church, we do have a few distinctives which are unlike practices followed by some congregations in the charismatic movement. One is that we do not clap our hands in our song services. I do not seek to legislate nordictate to other assemblies, but offer the following as food for thought. In visits to other churches using songs with which I was not familiar, I strained to hear the words and music and thus share in the message. Instead, more often than not, the message was blotted out or garbled by enthusiastic clapping. Those who did not know the songs were left with very little melody and practically no words that could be understood. All we got was the thumping, drumming rhythm of a beat, over-emphasized by the clapping. I got the urge to pat my feet, but I knew music that moves your feet and not your heart has far less to do with joy in the Lord than with bodily sensations and can be dangerous. I also remembered that in researching voodoo, Hindu and Africian rituals, and direct Satan worship, rhythmic and often dissonant beating of instruments and clapping were *always* incorporated in the preliminary phase of opening up people's minds and bodies to receive evil spirits. This same thing happens at rock concerts.

Let me say that I had no adverse reaction when people leaped and clapped their hands or clapped their hands and praised the Lord; it was only when it was coupled with and overshadowed the music that I found it disturbing.

At one such service I witnessed two new babes in Christ, recently saved and delivered from rock music, going into almost hypnotic weaving as they swayed and clapped with the beat-beat-beat of the music. A look came over them that was not of the Lord, an excitement I had seen in many demonized persons. I glanced around and saw others in the

assembly in the same condition. I remembered the deceitfulness of Satan and the alarm bells went off in my mind. The devil had slipped in, and through a singing group who thought they were doing service to God, Satan was actually recapturing captives who had been released; because he was doing it in the name of religion, no one suspected.

Following one such service we visited, we had to pray for several of our young people who developed splitting headaches during the musical program. People newly delivered from devilish music can be super-sensitive to such things. If one simply observes the swaying, sensual movements accompanying many of these sessions, it would become entirely plain that this stimulation is earthly, sensual and devilish: a most clever counterfeit, slipping in to mock and steal away glory from the Lord Jesus Christ.

I went home, took out my concordance and looked up the word "clap" in all its forms. Imagine my surprise when I found how few times it even occurred in the Bible. I had assumed, as I am sure others have, that it was mentioned many times in the Scripture. I ran the references. When I discarded the ones which had nothing to do with worship, and those in which inanimate objects were personified, I only had half the few references left. In the very few verses which were associated with praising and worshipping the Lord, there was a notable omission. *Not ONE SINGLE REFERENCE coupled clapping with singing*. Not one!

Of the nine verses that speak of clapping, five show instances in which it was done in derision and scorn. See Nahum 3:19 and Job 34:37 for examples of this. Two are personifications of inanimate objects, see Psalm 98:8 and Isaiah 55:12. One tells of a response to the crowning of a king-II Kings 11:12. Only one involves people praising the Lord, and that is by clapping with shouting, not with music.

Can it be that God, in His wisdom, caused this omission because He knew the danger of rhythm dominating the message, harmony and melody of music, thereby producing sensuality rather than spirituality?

Sensuality is the effect when rhythm and beat are overemphasized. Music is not given us for that, but to convey joyous worship in the words, with a melody to carry them to the heart! Singing can be uptempo, joyful, exuberant, but unobscured by a beat that unduly propels or overwhelms it. Let those who have accepted rock in a "Christian" mask ask, will that which I allow ultimately become a source of bondage for those who follow and look up to me as an older Christian?

Try the song services without clapping and see how they are. At least be sure that the sound and intensity of clapping are kept moderate and below the level of the melody and the message. It will be surprising how much more of the content of the songs comes through. The Holy Spirit can use this content to minister powerfully to a variety of needs in the congregation.

The whole rock music scene is filled with pitfalls for young people, including young believers. We may say that we have liberty to use rock tempos without danger, but Paul warns that our liberty must not become an occasion for stumbling to our weaker brothers: "But take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumblingblock to them that are weak" (I Corinthians 8:9).

Can it be that demonic influences have crept in right under our noses to steal away the clarity and distinctiveness of our victory over the devil and over all of his works? In this he must be discovered, lest he craftily cheapen and spoil the finest things of worship and praise. In their purest state these things are full of power to lift men and lead them to vital godliness. What the enemy is unable to do by direct

attack, let us be equally sure that he is unable to do by infiltration!

[1]From Systematic Theology, Vol. II, by Lewis S. Chafer, copyright 1947 by Dallas Seminary, Dallas, Texas. Used by permission. p. 41.

[2]From Invasion of Demons by John C. Hagee, copyright 1973 by Fleming Revell Co., Old Tappan, N.J. 07675. Used by permission. p. 49.

[3]From What's Wrong with Rock Music? (booklet) by Bob Larson, copyright by Bob Larson Books, Denver, Colorado 80226. Used by permission. p. 5.

[4]Ibid., p. 6.

[5]Hagee, op. cit., p. 50.

[6]Larson, op. cit., p. 6. Ill. Used by permission.

[7]From Music, Drugs and Sex (article) by Alex Lackey, 3647 W. 83rd. St., Chicago,

[8]From Jesus Christ Superstar, (article) by Vernon Lyons, Ashburn Baptist Church, 3647 W. 83rd St., Chicago, Ill. Used by permission.

Chapter 6

BATTLING THE HOSTS OF HELL

When a man goes on for years as a fundamental Bible-believing preacher and pastor battling the forces of darkness as he understands them, it comes as something of a shock when he is suddenly brought face to face with the forces of His infernal Majesty. It is a bit like warily circling a vicious, growling German Shepherd dog, which suddenly erupts into a towering tyrannosaurus, a monster of terrifying proportions and exceedingly dangerous. No matter who you are, facing the raw, supernatural horrors of Satanic fury will take you aback.

As you are casting around in your mind for some way to withdraw gracefully, a calmly confident Voice speaks firmly within: “Advance in the name of Jesus Christ and drive him back; he is already defeated, no matter how it looks." If you are accustomed to obedience to the Holy Spirit, you will somewhat hesitantly obey, and—wonder of wonders-the monster retreats, at first slowly and reluctantly, contesting the ground bitterly. Fear gives way to confidence in the Saviour and His absolute authority over the forces of darkness. The believer's authority in Jesus' name is awesome in its power.

Peterson reminds us that "God is not limited in His choice of believers to do battle with the foe. The Scriptures make it plain that the work of exorcising demons is not a special gift which God imparts to select believers, but that demons must obey any victorious Christian so long as the conditions are met. Exorcism depends on our position in Christ and not a particular gift.”[1]

“I pray that you will begin to understand how incredibly great His power is to help those who believe in Him," the

Apostle Paul wrote. "It is that same mighty power that raised Christ from the dead and lifted us up from the grave into glory along with Christ, where we sit with Him in the heavenly realms-all because of what Christ Jesus did" (Ephesians 1:19, 2:6 the Living Bible).

This is the beginning of understanding what spiritual warfare with the hosts of hell is all about. At this point the believer is leaving the wilderness wanderings, with its feeding on manna and water from the riven rock, to cross Jordan, and in the name and authority of the Captain of the Lord's hosts, to lock in mortal combat with the "giants in the land." Here, faith is the key and the territory regained from the usurpers is well worth the conflict.

Conditions For Deliverance

"Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind" (Matthew 22:37).

These are conditions for successful deliverance from demons: Humility; absolute honesty; willingness to turn from and confess all known sin; renunciation of all contact with evil spirits; the forgiving of all other persons; and complete surrender of every area of the life to the Lordship of Jesus Christ.

When it is demonic, the problem in the life must be faced squarely as the work of an evil spirit. It is indeed surprising how many people will attempt to rationalize away this fact and deny the presence of an evil spirit when all the symptoms are there. One seeking deliverance must utterly renounce and hate all the demons and all of their various manifestations in his life. If he clings knowingly to even one small facet of the demonic in his life, he can block the entire deliverance. God requires an unqualified and an

unconditional surrender and a total renunciation of the enemy.

Although believers wielding the name of Jesus have authority over every demon spirit, they cannot coerce the human will. In dealing with individuals Jesus did not violate the human will. We have had cases where deliverance was proceeding smoothly until some spirit (discerned by the workers) was rebuked, commanded to manifest and to leave. When this concerned an area unsurrendered to the Lord, the person immediately emerged and the demon was released from pressure. Deliverance ceased immediately, and most of the time the person became angry and upset. Deliverance is not selective. God wants the whole person clean.

Our first step is to try to lead a person to the definite accepting of Jesus Christ, if he has not already done this, before we pray for healing or deliverance. If there is no clear-cut testimony to salvation, we first ask him to invite Jesus Christ into his heart orally, to reaffirm his faith (Revelation 3:20). The experience of surrender to Jesus Christ and inviting Him to come in and save from sin is a spiritual disaster for the demons. His presence as Saviour stuns and weakens any demons present, and makes them much easier to remove.

The person desiring deliverance should and can help in his deliverance. Throwing aside past fears associated with his failure to cope with the forces within himself, he must link his weak faith with the stronger faith of the workers who gather around him to pray. He must earnestly desire to be free. A climate of love, compassion and faith is needed to break the bondage. Although the demons will bully and threaten, and even physically torture their victim, he must determine to see it through in order that the battle be won.

There should be a verbal confession of Jesus Christ as Saviour; the sins of word, mind and body; and any occult

involvement must be confessed. Satan's legal right to a life is broken by the renunciation of each sin and by the rejection of its effect on that life as a lie of the devil (II Corinthians 4:2); then the truth in God's Word concerning the situation may be claimed. For troublesome fears that sometimes occur at this time, read II Timothy 1:7 aloud.

Forgiveness of every person who has hurt or disappointed the one seeking deliverance is crucial, not optional, to a complete healing or deliverance. Jesus taught us to pray: "Forgive us our trespasses as we forgive those who trespass against us." It is wise to repeat orally something on this order: "Lord Jesus, I forgive (name the person) for anything he/she ever did to hurt or disappoint me, and I want you to bless him/her." When all remembered hurts have been forgiven (husbands, wives, children, parents, relatives, best friends, boy friends, girl friends, teachers, pastors, bosses and others), ask the Lord in Jesus' name to bring to mind any other person against whom resentment and bitterness is being held, grieving the Holy Spirit. The names will come into the mind and should be dealt with until no more are forthcoming. God is fair; He will bring to mind those resentments which have created roots of bitterness (Ephesians 4:31; Hebrews 12:15).

Many times during deliverance it may become essential to progress that unconfessed sin be dealt with. The usual method is to force the manifesting demon to retreat, allowing the person himself to "surface." He then can confess and renounce whatever sin or curse is involved. When battling particularly strong ruler demons this may be difficult because, at this stage, they will strenuously oppose efforts to reach the person. They fight a strong rear-guard action to prevent the loss of *any* ground formerly given to Satan.

I John 5:16 states, "If any man see his brother sin a sin not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death." Or, as stated in the Living Bible, "If you see a Christian sinning in a way that does not end in death, you should ask God to forgive him and God will give him life, unless he has sinned that one fatal sin.

On behalf of the beleaguered person you may confess his sin for him; this has been used with great effectiveness to break the hold of the resisting demon. A word of caution: this does not replace I John 1:9 and the believer's responsibility to confess his own sins; such personal confession should follow as soon as possible. This personal confession should include every sin confessed on the believer's behalf.

Though this alternative is effective, the effect is limited by the person's willingness to openly and completely confess and forsake his sin (Proverbs 28:13).

Complete surrender is particularly important and must be maintained if the deliverance is to last. God sets people free to follow Jesus and serve Him, not to go their own merry ways. If a person resists the conditions of deliverance, he is not ready. "And these signs shall follow those who believe: In my name shall they cast out demons "(Mark 16:17).

In your first direct encounter with demons you may expect sensations of stark fear, with chills, while looking into the leering eyes of a hellish spirit. This is no reason to draw back! A human being, confronted with the unveiled forces of darkness and evil for the first time is sure to have a reaction, and a powerful one at that. Do not rush madly to the panic button and lean on it, assuming you are unfit for front-line service. Rather, rest on the calm assurance that the power of Jesus Christ's name is more than sufficient to protect you. Claim Philippians 4:13, "I can do all things through Christ, Who strengthens me." Let God prove Himself sufficient.

Jesus Himself has given you the commission to cast out demons (Mark 16:17).

There are times when a stubborn demon will fail to give any sign of his presence and will resist any overt manifestation. The natural tendency of the workers attempting to pressure him to the surface is to feel that perhaps they are on the wrong track. Demons resist exposure, so it is encouraging to note that one of the signs that they are near the end of their resistance to openly showing themselves is that the eyes of the victim begin to water. Be encouraged and press the attack more vigorously.

Calmly and deliberately advance, demanding authoritatively and confidently in the name of Jesus that the demons manifest and leave the person, calling them by name. If they refuse to come out, ask them why, or by what authority they stay. Then attack the authority they claim. Usually they will say by their own or Satan's authority, and sometimes on the authority of a curse (one we dealt with went back hundreds of years!). Quote scriptures which declare your authority in Jesus over Satan and his hosts (Philippians 2:9, 10; Ephesians 1:19-21).

If they still resist and refuse, demand to talk to the person in whom the demon is residing. Demons may argue against this, but insist in Jesus' name and the person will again "surface." When you are talking with the individual, have him renounce the spirit specifically by name, in the name of Jesus and claim his freedom from it.

Keep repeating the Scriptures and demanding that the demons comply and come out of the person, citing Jesus' name as your authority. In the case of a curse, come against the curse, hex, potion, charm, incantation, or spell by the blood of Jesus Christ to break it (be sure the victim has renounced the curse in the name of Jesus). Remind the demon that Jesus died upon the cross and became a curse

for us (Galatians 3:13) and that by His death He blotted out the handwriting of ordinances against us (Colossians 2:14). These have proved effective with all curses (See Appendix).

The blood will break the curse and give the demon no grounds upon which to remain. Be sure there is no sin the person is clinging to, for this can block the whole deliverance process. In the case of the curse, send the demons by command back to the persons who sent them (Psalm 7:16; 109:17; Proverbs 26:27). They will wreak havoc on the persons who worked the spell, for spirits are fractious creatures and become infuriated when frustrated in doing their job.

In their rebellion against God, demons work to bring God's creature, man, into as much moral and spiritual ruination as possible. They seek to express their own evil desires and achieve their satisfactions through the use of the minds and bodies of their unwitting hosts. A spirit will put up quite a battle to keep from being evicted from his "house," as he designates his victim.

You will need other believers present to help you physically as well as spiritually. Depending on many factors, the strength of the demon spirits is such that it is often difficult to restrain the person in whom they are resident. It is quite common for a demon to resist by kicking, biting, fighting, and banging head or limbs on the floor, vomiting, and so forth. The supernatural strength these creatures can exert is something which must be seen to be believed.

When demons come out of hiding, discerned and cornered by believing Christians, the stronger spirits will seize control of every faculty of their victim in a wild attempt to run away. It is to be expected, in the case of a severely demonized person, that demons will go berserk and it will be like trying to hold a wild bucking horse, as the demon attempts to break loose and escape. Care must be exercised in restraining the

person, in order not to injure their limbs or body. You must never strike a demonized person, no matter what they do. The demon would enjoy your injuring the victim. He does not care about what happens to the host, and gets pleasure from his or her suffering.

Only by prayer combined with physical force can the demons be subdued and held. Only the overwhelming authority and power of our wonderful Saviour prevents them from tearing us apart, but that protection was absent in the account in Acts where demons in one man severely beat and stripped eight other men naked and chased them bleeding into the street (Acts 19:14). I and other workers have been bitten, punched in the face, clawed, butted, spat upon, kicked, and otherwise physically assailed by the demons, and we were wielding the authority of Christ!

The face of the victim will sometimes twist and distort into the most outlandish shapes and forms that make it look less than human. I have seen faces assume impossible caricatures which closely resembled animals, not human beings. Do not be surprised when moans and animal-like growls and roars come from the person being prayed for. The eyes will glaze and pure hate, rage, and murder will be mirrored in them. In some cases the eyelids will seldom, if ever, blink. The demon will refer to the demonized one in the third person. "She wants me," or "I own him, I won't come out of him;" "She doesn't hear you;" "You are hurting his leg (or arm);" "That's right, press a little harder there, she'll have a good bruise tomorrow;" and so on.

When there is the yelling and screaming of obscenities, you can command the demons to be still in Jesus' name and many times this will quiet them. However, I have seen some who only screamed and cursed louder in response. Sometimes we just hold the mouth. But be careful, those teeth will hurt when they find an opportunity to bite! Be firm and quiet in

your approach, for the spirits are not deaf. You need not descend to a shouting match.

Very often defeated spirits will ask where they can go. At one time we ordered them to go to the pit or to hell. The evil spirits, although they know about the pit, insisted that we could not do that. Checking the Scriptures, we could find no basis for doing this. A demon was right when he angrily demanded that I show him in "that Book" where it said I could send him to the pit. When I asked, "What Book"? he warily replied, "You know what Book, I'm not going to speak its name!" In the absence of any specific mandate from the Scriptures, perhaps the best course might be: "Go to the place where Jesus sends you," or "Go to the place where Jesus wants you to go."

One technique which has proved effective with many demons, causing them real terror and concern, is to threaten to send them to Tartarus. This is mentioned in the Greek New Testament in II Peter 2:4: "For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell (consigning to Tartarus) and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgement . Many times the demon will be so frightened by the prospect of being carted off to Tartarus that he will cease resisting and give in. Sending one or two to Tartarus bound seems to have a salutory effect on those remaining and they will usually prove more cooperative. Perhaps this is the place mentioned in Job 30:3-8.

I have seen hundreds of demons leave quietly without much more than coughing or sighing. Others have produced manifestations of cursing, blaspheming, violent retchings, vomiting, moans, groans, shrieks, screams, growls, roars, convulsions, choking, yawns, belches, and so forth. Some chatter hysterically, while others refuse to speak at all. A relatively quiet deliverance is just as valid as those which erupt into a spectacular display of demonic energy and

power. It is merely an attempt to hold the captive fast in the bondage of evil.

Do not seek specific manifestations; just take authority over the spirits by name and, in the name of Jesus, command them to manifest themselves. Demand this repeatedly until they obey. Keep in mind that many are very stubborn and cunning and none wants to leave the person in whom he resides. Evil spirits always prefer to remain hidden, and resist exposure.

Their orders are to hold the person captive at all costs. This they do with fierce determination and resistance. They face demotion if they lose out and are forced to leave the tormented person. The Scriptures say they have to walk in dry places, finding no rest (Matthew 12:43; Luke 11:24).

No doubt Satan attempts to answer their pleas for help, but he is effectively blocked by the intervention of God Who sends multitudes of covering angels to protect the workers. One night a demon complained that God had sent 46,000 angels to protect the church while we prayed for many demonized persons. He admitted that Satan was unable to slip reinforcements through the angelic blockade.

One night we dealt with a man who had to be held flat to the floor. As I attacked the demon, I noticed a strange change in the man's eyes. Instead of one or two highlights in them, four and sometimes five bright flecks of light reflected from each eye. Yet there was only one source of artificial light overhead which might cause reflection.

Puzzled, I prayed, asking the Father for the meaning. Quickly the Lord replied, "My son, you prayed for angelic protection for you and the workers-what you see is a reflection of the angels I have sent."

Some weeks later I saw such lights in the eyes of another individual with whom we prayed. But as I leaned closer I noted a difference. Each light seemed composed of tiny pin

pricks of light, slowly rotating and looking for all the world like Ezekiel's wheels (Ezekiel 1:15-18). miniature wheels! Immediately there flashed into memory

Angelic creatures circling overhead, giving loving care and protection to the people of God! How my heart sings when I remember the goodness and provision of the Lord. Legions of angels provide wonderful protection and assurance for those who march into battle for God.

We prayed for the protection of God's angels long before any signal confirmation of their presence was noted. Even as Elisha's servant was under the protection of God's angels before he saw them (II Kings 6:15-17), so are we in our battle with evil spirits. "They who are with us are more than they who are with them," the prophet Elijah told the younger man.

A high-ranking spirit of Mind-Control complained bitterly and frustratedly, "God had always given us a raw deal. First He threw us out of heaven and onto this mud ball. Then instead of giving us opponents worthy of challenge, we have to work these clods of dirt! It is disgusting." It seems that in the against wisdom and irony of God He has elected to humiliate the angelic rebels by defeating them with men: inferior human creatures armed with superior spiritual weapons-the name and blood of our Lord Jesus Christ.

I have heard demons sob, shriek, howl, groan and cry hysterically to be left alone. As one observer said, "Their end is already set, so they have nothing to gain but a vicarious expression of their own nature through a living person. They definitely have a hierarchy among themselves and constantly battle for position. . . They can argue and philosophize and carry on empty conversations until their backs are against the wall, and then they are pure anger and fear." Sometimes they will try to strike a bargain and promise not to cause any more trouble if they can only remain in the person. They typically begin belligerent and cocky, later

growing uneasy and angry. At the end they bargain and beg with frantic desperation.

I remember one spirit who cried piteously, "I am only a very small demon. I will not cause any more trouble. Please don't send me out. I promise I will cause no more trouble." Don't ever be touched by any of their attempts to play on your sympathy, pleading for mercy. They are masterful liars. They *never* have mercy on one of their victims. Do not forget this.

We heard one demon sob bitterly and convincingly that he wanted to repent and be saved, working on the sympathy of the believers present. When I called him a liar and branded him as one with a reprobate mind, he immediately dropped the guise of meekness and weeping and cackled with wicked laughter, mocking those who had thought he was sincere. Never believe a demon in such matters. They are seared; vile and treacherous beyond our power to comprehend. You need never plead with them. Take authority over them in the name of Jesus Christ and because of His shed blood and resurrection. Order them to come out and continue to repeat the command until they obey. They understand God's order of authority better than human beings, although they will resist it furiously.

There is neither grace nor mercy provided for failure in the satanic ranks, whether they be high or low. A demon of lower rank cornered during the course of a battle, was so frightened and defeated that at last all he wanted was to get out of that body house. He declared that he could stand no more. He begged to leave but I forbade him, demanding the name of other demons first. He quailed in terror and said no, he could never do that; he would be terribly punished. We increased the pressure on him, forbidding the others to interfere. I ordered the other spirits back, forbidding them to communicate with him; I then set to work on him. Though he pleaded that he had orders to remain silent, he finally

revealed twenty names, then begged to be released before "the big ones" got him and punished him for his betrayal.

I gave him permission to go and he fled with a shriek. Then a furious ruler suddenly manifested, raging about the lesser demon's treachery. "He'll pay for that," he promised, boiling with hatred. “He will be most thoroughly punished," filling the air with obscenities as he concluded. It seems that periodically demons of all ranks must report to Satan for personal evaluation and are punished quite harshly for any blunder in word or deed.

The enemy heads a kingdom that is full of hatred and terror. There is a continual striving for position and power and competition is fierce. Demons differ in many ways, but they have one thing in common: they are totally reprobate, wicked and without conscience. There is nothing they will not stoop to. The demons seek to express their evil desires and achieve their satisfactions, as far as possible, through the use of the minds and bodies of their unwitting hosts.

Lying is one of their outstanding characteristics. Only when it suits their purposes-in defense of their enormous egos, or when they are fearful or angry, or when they are under great stress and strain from the Holy Spirit and their thinking is confused-will they tell the truth. To say they never tell the truth is just not so. Demons cried out their terrorized acknowledgement of the deity of Jesus Christ-"they cried out, saying, 'What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? Art thou come hither to torment us before the time?" Certainly the demonized girl who followed Paul told the truth about the "servants of the most high God who show us the way of salvation" (Matthew 8:29 and Acts 16:17).

I was talking with a ruler demon once when violent coughing erupted. After waiting for it to subside, I asked who had left. The ruler spirit replied, "I did." Somewhat surprised, I remarked skeptically, "But you are still here."

"Well, stupid, I went out and came back," he said scornfully. When asked what purpose such a maneuver served, he replied that he had gone to check on the man's wife in a nearby town.

There is no such thing as reasoning with a demon, for they are totally unreasonable and they are past masters at deceit, far sharper in a game of wits than are human beings unaided by the Holy Spirit. As one told me with a sneer of disdain, "Why Preacher, I've been dealing with human beings for nearly 6,000 years." It takes supernaturally-given insight and discernment to deal successfully with these spirit beings.

A favorite tactic of the spirits is to cause the workers to forget or overlook names given orally in response to spiritual pressure. It is important to keep alert to this. Often the smaller demon under direct attack will be relieved by a more powerful spirit. You must then insist that the smaller foe return to battle, thus denying him rest, meanwhile ordering the stronger spirit bound (Matthew 18:18).

The Psalms, a handbook on the warfare of the righteous against demon forces, is full of imprecations and dreadful pronouncements against the enemies of God. Many liberal theologians have imagined that there is a conflict between these terrible calls for vengeance on enemies and the command of Jesus to love your enemies. But when you understand that the psalmist is calling down the wrath of God upon spiritual rather than human foes (who are mere instruments), you can see why there is the unrelenting call for their destruction and utter desolation. Yet this same David, confronted with the opportunity to destroy his human enemy Saul, would not lift his hand to smite him. Note how the enemy persecutes David's soul, and how the Angel of the Lord is asked to chase them (Psalm 35:4-6).

In dealing with demons, there is no particular need to raise your voice. Power comes from the name of Jesus, not from

volume. Demons are not deaf; they hear quite well. Even a whisper in faith they understand. The noise, when it occurs at the deliverance session of ours, comes from the exposed and cornered demons, not from the believers. You must have no mercy on these evil creatures, but if you yell excitedly at them, it is conceivable that you may even cause them to feel that are unsure of your ground, and thereby encourage them to fight harder to stay in the person. Keep calm. "In quietness and confidence shall be your strength" (Isaiah 30:15).

Our attitude toward these evil beings must never be one of lightness, for the Scriptures tell us that not even the angels deal with them that way. Consider this passage, which contrasts the way false teachers handle the weightiest spiritual matters, with the attitude of God's holy angels:

God is "especially hard on those who . . . are proud and willful, daring even to scoff at the Glorious Ones without so much as trembling, although the angels in heaven who stand in the very presence of the Lord, and are far greater in power and strength than these false teachers, never speak out disrespectfully against these evil Mighty Ones. But false teachers are fools, no better than animals. . . they laugh at the terrifying powers of the underworld which they know so little about; and they will be destroyed along with all the demons and powers of hell" (II Peter 2:10-12, Living Bible).

Consider A. J. McMillan's wise observation that, among earnest servants of God, there never comes "an attitude of self-confidence in dealing with the invisible spirits of darkness, even though the consciousness of the authority of the Lord increases as they realize that 'the spirits are subject' unto them (Luke 10:20). On the contrary, their apprehension of the stubborn subtlety of these evil beings intensifies, and they appreciate the fact that only on the ground of the blood of the Lamb is there any power to deal with them."[2]

In their ardent desire to hold the ground they have gained within human beings, demons employ a number of strategies, at least one of which occurs considerably in advance of any direct confrontation with them. They work to turn their victims away from a real source of help. Demonized persons. will therefore often mirror the feelings of the spirits within them in their reactions to people and places. For example, when they come into contact with individuals or churches engaged in the deliverance ministry, they may "feel" the suspicion, repugnance, disgust and fears of the demons for such happenings and individuals. Not knowing of his "visitors" and their dominance over him, the victim is forced to rationalize and explain his feelings entirely in terms of the demonic lies being fed into his brain.

Spirits often produce perfectly timed pains and illnesses to keep their hosts away from deliverance services. These tactics of the enemy explain the unbelief, the unreasoning fears, and the fierce hatred and determination with which the deliverance ministry is at times attacked. It is not just theological differences, but Satan's violent reaction to the unmasking and defeating of his kingdom and methods of operation. People being used to attack that which God is doing almost always think themselves to be doing a service for God.

We have observed that the demons are very sensitive in the area of ego. Many times, when we have had them under. pressure, we have witnessed an explosion of rage and retaliation to prove that the "mortal clods" are wrong. This seems to be a very exhausting experience for them and, by thus provoking them to anger, the Holy Spirit clouds the demon's thinking faculties and causes them to make great blunders, giving the workers an advantage. Beware, and proceed with caution; a wounded tiger may be more dangerous than a whole one.

When demons begin to threaten and become increasingly or agitated, boisterously demonstrating their angry considerable power and strength, you can know that they are frightened or enraged, and probably both. Force them in Jesus' name to keep manifesting themselves and demand their names. They will attempt to "sink out of sight" to rest from the wear and tear of spiritual warfare.

You might well ask how a spiritual being could tire. I don't pretend to know the answer, but I do know that they become fatigued, worn and frazzled and even hysterical when pressed. Do not let them rest, but maintain spiritual pressure upon them at all times. Force them to look into the eyes of the worker who is leading the attack. They hate this, and must be continually prodded to do so. It has a weakening effect on them.

I have heard several beg pitifully for a chance to rest. A climate of spiritual power, reinforced by compassionate love for the person involved, must be kept constantly on the demonic spirit within. This will allow them no time to recoup their powers. Love is critical here, the kind of deep love which overflows into compassion for the victim of the spirits. Do not allow the spirits to escape the battering ram of believing prayer. Prayers, both in English and in a heavenly language are invaluable here, as are the reading of the Scriptures and songs of praise for Jesus and His shed Blood ("Nothing But the Blood," "Power in the Blood," "There is a Fountain Filled with Blood," "Victory in Jesus," "Something About That Name," "Jesus, Oh How Sweet the Name," "The Blood Will Never Lose Its Power" are all especially good). The demons know and understand all of the prayer tongues, and resent them bitterly. Often the tongues will stir them up and cause them to manifest themselves. Praying in tongues also rests the workers,

physically and mentally. "He who speaks in an unknown tongue edifies himself" (I Corinthians 14:4).

When we first began our ministry of deliverance, we were suddenly and without warning plunged headlong into a clash with the powers of darkness. At the time, neither I nor my workers had the charismatic gifts or had spoken in tongues. A believer can do the work of deliverance without the tongues and gifts, but it is much easier with them. The gifts came to us about four months after we began casting out demons.

As I related earlier, I was prompted by the Holy Spirit to use tongues first with a demonized girl. Although puzzled and somewhat hesitant, I did obey the Lord and got an instant and violent reaction from the demon. He obviously understood every word and did not like it at all. Many times, in addition to helping the weary workers (I Corinthians 14:4), the tongues are used to name the demons and further harass them. The use of tongues will cause the demon to become rattled and he will manifest himself more openly and often give away vital information to the workers, essential to forcing his expulsion.

This incident with a fierce demon may help to illustrate something about tongues: "Satan help me, please help me," the demon shrieked, writhing in anguish under the determined advance of the believers. His supernatural strength was just barely being contained by the eight men who held the subject fast on the floor. "No, No, No, don't speak to me of that name!" the demon snarled as I quoted: "Wherefore God has given Him a name that is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow and every tongue confess- what must every tongue confess, demon?"

"No, No, No, I won't say it, You can't make me say it. He isn't my Lord! I won't say it, I won't say it!" was his furious

rejoinder. I kept repeating the verse and insisting that he finish it. Finally he spat in a raging whisper: "Jeeeeeee-sussssssss is Lord . . . No, no, no! Satan is Lord! Forgive me, Satan." I forced him again to complete the verse and then leaned close to the head of the young man and began praying in tongues. The demon reacted immediately, jerking the victim's head away and exploding, "No, I don't want to hear it. Don't chatter at me in that awful language. Stop it, stop it, I can't stand any more. Another demon once stormed, “Shut up—you sound like those damned angels!" Does this not make sense in the light of I Corinthians 13:1 speaking in "tongues of men and angels?”

Do not be paralyzed by the fear of making mistakes. Who doesn't? Only those who simply do nothing at all. Learn from the mistakes you make and they will become profitable to you. We have made dozens of mistakes we know about, and probably many of which we are unaware. At least we are doing what we can with what we have and what we understand. It is hard on your pride to goof up, but no irreparable damage is done if you repent and learn from your mistakes.

When the demons begin to wail, shriek, cackle like maniacs, curse, gag, growl, retch, cough, belch, convulse, threaten, bluster, brag, beg, plead, and so forth rejoice! They have been forced out of hiding when they manifest themselves openly. If you will hold firmly to the authority that is in the name of Jesus, they must yield. Child of God, you have the upper hand! On the plains of hesitation, bleach the bones of millions, who at the dawn of victory sat down to rest, and while resting. . . died! Do not retreat; in quietness and confidence shall be your strength (Isaiah 30:15).

Strength In Numbers

"And He called unto Him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two, and gave them power over unclean spirits" (Mark 6:7).

Only under exceptional circumstances should a worker tackle the job of freeing a heavily demonized person alone. There are times when what begins as a direct prayer for a troubled person can become a confrontation with a ferocious stampeding beast, upon the rousing of angry spirits buried deep within the individual's body and mind.

Tackling a demon alone can be a blunder leading to serious physical and spiritual side effects. It is far better to have at least one other Christian standing with you in the fight. Jesus sent the disciples out two by two, not accidently, but by wise design.

Some of the most severe personal attacks I have undergone upon my mind, body and spirit have occurred following a deliverance session which I undertook alone. In the beginning I did this ignorantly, and at other times I have done it of necessity. Spiritual warfare can and sometimes must be undertaken alone, but great caution should be exercised and you must keep yourself covered with the blood at all times: before, during, and after such a confrontation with the devil. In deliverance, there is safety in numbers:

"Two are better than one; because they have a good reward for their labor. For if they fall, the one will lift up his fellow; but woe to him that is alone when he falls, for he has not another to help him up . . . And if one prevail against him, two shall withstand him; and a threefold cord is not quickly broken" (Ecclesiastes 4:9, 10, 12).

Two paragraphs in a Moody Press classic illustrate what I am talking about rather graphically. They tell of problems in India:

"Demons are very vengeful. They want to afflict the man who casts them out. If possible, they want to possess him, if they can find any weakness in him. I had to cast darkness from one of our own evangelists who tried to cast out very powerful demons, nine in one person. I traveled three hundred miles to pray over that person. He is all right now."[3]

"A woman . . .who had cast out many demons before, tried to cast out nine from one man. Immediately there was a terrible reaction. She became very ill and was suffering . . . She was a faithful woman, doing mighty things in the name of the Lord. I anointed her and drove out the darkness in her. Immediately she recovered . . . She was right with the Lord, but she had not the strength to deal with nine demons at one time. Demons are very revengeful. They will always attack the person who wants to drive them out . They do not want to leave and when we send them out they become terribly afraid . . . So everyone must be careful about his or her spiritual strength in dealing with demons."[4]

If it is absolutely necessary to attack the enemy alone, be sure that you are a veteran of many deliverance battles and not a novice. As in other areas of Christian work, the novice is in special peril (1 Timothy 3:6). Experience teaches you to understand something of the tactics of the enemy as well as his power. It also teaches you caution in dealing with these most deadly opponents. If you are a novice, let me strongly urge that you never take on the battle alone. Do not let the devil inveigle you into an encounter for which you are not prepared. Demons are not to be tampered with lightly. Severe oppression can result and many harmful and disturbing side effects of demonic attacks as well.

Demons have several distinct forms of attack. One might be characterized as a frontal assault. To deal with this you submit yourself to God, resist the devil, and he will flee from

you (James 4:7). If the attack continues, keep up your resistance and enlist the prayer aid of other believers.

Another form of attack is more serious and can be paralyzing, greatly interfering with the normal functioning of the individual in everyday life. Usually this is because of some habit or some wrong relationship which has not been confessed, renounced and forsaken, and which therefore supplies a basis for direct enemy action.

If, while working with a demonized person, you should begin to feel depressed, develop a headache, dizziness, or other unusual pains or pressures, retire from the fight temporarily and let another worker relieve you. Leave the scene of the battle and immediately take authority over Satan in Jesus' name and command him to cease whatever he is doing to you. Name it specifically. If this does not bring relief after several attempts, seek out another believer and have him pray for you until the symptoms are defeated and you are free to return to the struggle.

You will need all the information and applicable Scriptures you can find to aid you in the warfare with evil spirits, and you will be in many situations where only the indwelling Holy Spirit can lead you through the new and dangerous ground. A special sensitivity and obedience to the Holy Spirit is necessary and crucial to both success and protection. The Word of God needs to be deeply ingrained in your thinking and life.

Plead the blood of Jesus Christ over yourself, your fellow workers and the victim of the demons. Do not hesitate to pray for angelic protection from God to oversee and block the attempts of Satan to reinforce his beleaguered garrisons. Demons often pray aloud to "Father Satan" or Lucifer, imploring him to send the help he evidently had promised them in event of such an attack.

"The angel of the Lord encamps round about them that fear Him, to deliver them" (Psalm 34:7). Remember that God's angelic forces are bending near as you move in to liberate the captives. There are two to one in our favor, and God's angels do not have to be in the majority; it is enough that they are commissioned of God (Revelation 12:4).

A demon told us that at the resurrection, all the hosts of Satan were at the tomb with their master to witness his triumph. However, when God's angels came and rolled back the stone, the demons were unable to hold it in place, though they all tried. He began to weep, shaking his head sadly and moaned, "Only two." Just think, only two against all the assembled hosts of the enemy and yet they overcame them!

We, too, have an overcoming promise: "And they overcame him (Satan) by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death" (Revelation 12:11). Take heart, they who are with us are greater than those with the adversary (II Kings 6:16). Use available weapons: pray, sing songs of praise and songs about the blood of Jesus Christ and the resurrection, and use the Word of God in the hours that sometimes creep by before the forces of Satan beat a stubbornly slow retreat.

Satanic Subversion

Demons definitely know your human weaknesses and limitations and will play on them. I have seen tormented and embattled spirits begin to accuse and attack the workers around them, stating that there were evil spirits in them. This was a tactic to disrupt the believers and to cause suspicion to come between them. Unity is all-important in spiritual warfare and the demons well understand this. Without unity and confidence in each other, the Christian

workers cannot bring maximum pressure to bear upon the evil spirits.

Undoubtedly the demons suffer terribly when spiritual pressures are applied, and they will attempt to use any tactic to gain relief and respite. The devil's hosts well understand the technique of dividing and conquering by use of slander and insinuation. Remember that Satan lies, as do his emissaries; therefore, never accept a demon's unsupported accusation against a brother or sister in the Lord. Since Satan is the accuser of the brethren, it is not surprising that his followers would use this maneuver (Revelation 12:10). If you are accused by a demon, however, you will do well to examine yourself. Sometimes they do tell the truth, when it serves their purposes. Far more often, they lie.

From Frances Manuel's most helpful and enlightening book, this quotation further illustrates how the enemy moves to divide the workers: "The dialogues (between the demons) revealed that the indwelling demons receive strength through those they call 'suggestive demons.' We discovered that these are the demons who seem not to be seeking embodiment, but are rather continually wandering about in an attempt to 'accuse the brethren' to each other. Their appointed work, it seems, is to stir up divisions among groups of Christians and to inject into people's minds many false doctrines and teachings of demons. One of the demons who was being expelled told us that there were eight thousand suggestive demons in our cabin that night. He wailed in agony and admitted that there were some fifty thousand angels of God in that tiny room to defend us. So Christian, take heart, God is on our side!"[5]

If you have been delivered from some deep involvement in a particular area of the demonic realm, (i.e., the occult, drugs, religion, sexual immorality, etc.) you can sometimes be of special help to others who are in a similar predicament.

There is an exception. There are times when one is emotionally involved with the subject of deliverance (boy friend, girl friend, etc.). In this case it is better to leave the burden of deliverance to others, lest personal feelings enter in, coloring discernment, and in some cases, actually strengthening the demons. As Dr. Koch points out: "there is a possiblity that if a person puts too Imuch of his own effort into trying to help the demonically oppressed that a transference will take place."[6]

However, in the case of a husband or father, a man is clothed with special power and authority from the Lord over his wife or child (Ephesians 5:24). In some instances, he can succeed in casting out a demon which had successfully resisted the efforts of experienced Christian exorcists.

A word of caution. There is a demonic laying on of hands that imparts strength and encouragement to the embattled demons in a person. If the wrong person comes and touches the person being dealt with, immediately the demon relaxes, ceases struggling and begins to rest. So if a demon suddenly eases up and ceases to struggle, see if someone new has come up and touched the person.

We have had several cases where this has happened. I mention one to illustrate. We were praying for a young man in whom there was a vicious demon of hate for his mother. In the struggle, a young man relinquished his place holding a leg to another young man. Immediately the demon evidenced ease and even contentment. Recognizing what had happened, I quietly asked the boy (who had serious conflicts with his mother) to let someone else hold the leg. He complied immediately, and when the transfer was made, the demon let out a scream of terror and began to buck and pitch again and snapped out at me. "I hate you smart (obscenities)." Not only is it comforting to the demon to have such a person touch the oppressed one, but it could be

dangerous to the individual touching him, in the event of a transference of the demons to him. So be sure of your workers.

The Battle is The Lord's

Weariness is a constant foe in the conflict with demons and it will creep up on you stealthily, therefore watch for it. Take a break from the struggle before the enemy is able to disable you. Women seem particularly susceptible to attack, so be certain there is manpower available to help in these matters if at all possible (Read the pertinent section in the Appendix on Women). In dealing with our wary and resourceful foe, caution is a constant watchword.

When under severe and dangerous attack, the demons will often take counsel to decide strategy. Sometimes the person in whom they are hiding can even overhear and relay the plans. At other times, some believer among the workers may be keen enough in discernment to "hear" the plans and thus alert the workers. There is always a chief or ruler demon who is the most powerful and has authority over the lesser spirits. His word is law for the other demons and though they may not always agree with his decision, they must obey him. He decides how best to weather the storm created by the believers and their prayers. Often he will order complaining and protesting spirits to leave the body in order to hoodwink the workers into believing that all have gone. He will sacrifice some or all of his cohorts to protect himself.

As a submarine under attack by a flotilla of destroyers will plunge in a crash dive to the bottom, sending up oil and "wreckage" to confuse the attackers, so the demons will behave in a similar fashion. They send “up” lesser demons to convince the believers that the deliverance is effected. Those

left behind become very quiet; the submerged personality of the victim often surfaces and, seemingly, normality has returned. Watch the eyes of the victim. Stay between him and the outside door, lest the demons suddenly make a scramble to flee from the place.

Talk with the person about how he feels, about loving Jesus and get him to praise Jesus (the spirits are very reluctant to do this). Ask the person to state that Jesus Christ, the Son of God, came in the flesh (I John 4:3). Demons will not do it, though they will sometimes say "Yes" to the simple question.

There are exceptions. We have discovered that any religious spirit can, and often will, lie, glibly parroting meaningless "confessions" of faith, etc. Antichrist is particularly adept at this ruse. However, this does not negate the teaching of Scripture that evil spirits cannot confess Jesus is come in the flesh (I John 4:2, 3). You must understand that this "confession" is bogus, done in deceit, and therefore is not legitimate.

Demons often sneak up to catch a quick look through the victim's eyes. An alert discerner of spirits can spot that flash of demonic intelligence, and also tell if there are yet more spirits to be cast out.

If the person is reluctant to talk about Jesus, and to praise Him, if he is hesitant to receive Christian love, be careful. If he talks about being too tired to praise the Lord or to talk with you, beware! It is the demon trying to remain hidden until he can get the victim away. People who have experienced deliverance are so thankful and grateful to God, it is obvious that they have been delivered. I have seen persons so exhausted that they asked the workers to hold up their hands for them to praise the Lord Jesus for deliverance (Psalm 134).

In suspect cases, the word of wisdom and the word of knowledge will often come into play, working with the

discerning of spirits, giving guidance to the workers. Pure love from the believers is useful also in rooting out the demons in hiding. Demons cannot understand nor cope with love. One spirit told me recently: "There's no such thing as love. We have more than you stupid mortals do and we don't have it, and you can't either. It's not real, It's all a lie, and there's no such thing. Love for the victim will cause a reaction of utter revulsion and disgust by the demons. It seems to make them about as miserable as anything can.

The Covenant of Blood in the Appendix is also helpful in checking such a situation. Demons fervently hate the covenant. It is helpful to read before and during the deliverance. If the oppressed one is not able to read it, you can change the wording to make it read as his confession of faith and speak it aloud. When a person at last breaks into the sunlight of freedom from the spirits, he will be flooded with love and peace and wonderful joy, praising the Lord Jesus freely.

Witnessing this blessed time of worship somehow makes you forget the long, tedious and straining hours, the pulled muscles and rumpled clothing. Always pray that the Holy Spirit fill and thoroughly flush out every trace of the demon's nest in the person before you leave him. Pray for special angelic protection over the captive set free; his body, mind and spirit, and for the blood of Jesus to seal everything which has been done. Pray the same protection for the workers.

This will give you some understanding of what spiritual conflict with the hosts of hell is all about. In this area of the Christian life there is nothing like direct, personal experience, which will surely confirm again and again the power of the Risen Saviour and the truth of His Word.

[1]From Are Demons for Real? by Robert Peterson, copyright 1968 by Overseas Miss. Fellowship, Moody Press, Chicago, Ill. Used by permission. p. 79.

[2]From Modern Demon Possession, by A. J. Mac Millan, copyright by Christian Pub., Harrisburg, Pa. Used by permission. p. 19.

[3]From Demon Experiences in Many Lands, copyright 1960 by Moody Press, Chicago, Ill. Used by permission. p. 24.

[4]Ibid., p. 29.

[5]From Though an Host Should Encamp by Frances Manuel, copyright 1971 by Christian Literature Crusade, Washington, Pa. Used by permission. p. 87.

[6]From Occult Bondage and Deliverance by Kurt Koch, copyright by Kregel Pub., Grand Rapids, Michigan. p. 105.

Chapter 7

HOW DEMONS OPERATE

The question always arises, how do you know if a person is demonized? Those who question persons engaged in deliverance work often ask, "How can I know if I have a demon?"

We must not underestimate the enemy or think that he necessarily seeks to produce gross or crude behavior. He may, indeed, do that, but it is not always the case. An evil spirit does not always appear as an ugly and repulsive habit, characteristic or trait. It has been said that demons "burrow, like termites, into our lives until they ultimately bring about rot and weakness"-their work is hidden but their effects are serious and ultimately devastating. The enemy does his very best work when he is able to accomplish his purposes secretly, buried deep in the personality, and often under religious guises.

Dr. Zoller states that, "Demons are persons above all else and differ just as persons on earth do. They have traits, preferences, likes and dislikes, and they seek out persons with similar tendencies and when they enter, they immediately burrow into the deep recesses of the personality and attempt to disguise themselves to convince the person and others who know him that the traits and attitudes and actions they promote are in reality coming from the person himself and not from them.

"Demons know immediately whether you are a born-again believer or whether you are not. They know those who have a head belief; they know those whose names are written in God's Book of Life and who have the seal of God in their foreheads. They know what suggestions to evil you will accept and which you will reject and they act accordingly."[1]

A demon cannot ordinarily enter your body until you open the way for him to do so (except in the event of physical, mental or psychological shock, or in cases where demons have gained a foothold in a family line and are able to perpetuate their work in the next generation). Jessie Penn-Lewis writes that believers are open to attacks by evil spirits "because they have in most cases unwittingly fulfilled the conditions upon which evil spirits work. Such attacks are the outcome of yielding to the sins of the flesh, or any sin which gives the evil spirits a hold in the fallen nature. "[2]

"Because their knowledge of the devil's character and methods of working is limited and circumscribed, many true children of God only recognize 'temptation' when the nature of the thing presented is visibly evil, and *according to their limited knowledge of evil*, so they do not recognize the Tempter and his temptations when they come under the guise of natural or physical or lawful and apparent 'good.'

"... Because the thoughts of God's people are governed by ignorance, and limited knowledge, they call the works of God of the devil; and the works of the devil, of God, and they are not taught the need of learning to discern the difference between the 'unclean and the clean' (Ezekiel 44:23) nor how to decide for themselves what is of God, or what is of the devil Neither do all believers know that they have a choice between good and good, i.e., between the lesser and the greater good; and the devil often entangles them here."[3]

Robert Peterson points out that, "The method of deception is varied to suit the special circumstances of the victim. But whatever plan is used, Satan and his emissaries persevere until the end is achieved and the deceived becomes ensnared. Defeat for the Satanic powers comes only when the believer recognizes the peril and is on guard against it."[4]

All Christians are anxious that their walk with the Lord be buttressed with experiences that will serve to verify the

facts of the Scriptures. The gift of the discernment of spirits is very necessary, lest the devil begin to give us "religious" experiences which counterfeit the real thing. Only by the Word of God can these things be evaluated—and not by a piecemeal, “proof- text” approach, but rather by seeking the whole counsel of the Scriptures.

Trust the Lord for understanding and plunge into God's Word. But if you come up with singular and radical "new" revelations and insights that are foreign to the people who have led you to the Lord and have nurtured you spiritually, you will do well to take a wait-and-see attitude. Develop a day-by-day study of the Bible, and remember that the Lord Jesus never coerces or forces, but gently leads. He is never harsh or curt with the trusting believer, but is loving and patient.

In this same vein Robert Frost writes, "The Lord impressed us to be careful in our pursuit of signs, lest we become misguided by the false signs of the enemy. We were cautioned about shifting our faith from God's greatest sign (Jesus) to that of earthly things. Our confidence was to rest primarily upon our Good Shepherd rather than on some method of determining God's will."[5]

Mrs. Penn-Lewis cautions, "If the believer ceases to use mind, reason, will, and all his other faculties as a person, and depends upon voices and impulses for guidance in every detail of life, he will be 'led' or guided by evil spirits feigning to be God."[6] "Supernatural visions and manifestations are a fruitful source of revenue to deceiving spirits especially when the believer relies upon, and quotes more from these experiences than the Word of God; for the aim of the wicked spirit is to displace the Word of God as the rock-ground of the life."[7]

Because we have been born again, we must not assume that we are thereby automatically protected from the power of

evil spirits, nor are we necessarily delivered from them. A. J. MacMillan writes: "By believing lies of the enemy (doctrines of demons), the mind becomes blinded and the will becomes increasingly under the control of the unseen forces, until the personality is quite swayed by them . . . The will becomes so influenced by false conceptions injected into the mind that it cannot respond to the presentation of the truth There has been in some manner a surrender of the will which is not realized by the victim . . . The objection is frequently made that a true child of God cannot be brought thus under the control of the enemy. Experience disproves this, for even spiritual believers and earnest successful workers have suffered, some of them never coming to the place of complete deliverance."[8]

We as Christians have many precious promises which are ours potentially but which have not yet been possessed, as a matter of fact. The children of Israel were given the land of promise by divine fiat while they were yet in the wilderness. They then had to act upon God's Word. So we also have wonderful provisions from God not yet fully appreciated or appropriated, and therefore not yet actually experienced.

In God's dealings with Israel, the land was theirs entirely, but it was under the control of trespassers and wrongful occupants who "squatted" on the land. Giants in the land had to be vanquished, and this was done by the spiritual power given as they acted in faith. In like manner, the territory held by the demons in a person's life must be wrested from the control of those wrongly occupying it. Sometimes "legal action" is necessary to break their hold, such as the renunciation of sin, of curses, and of past alliances and transactions by which they were allowed access, penetration and tenancy or possession.

A. J. MacMillan believes that, "Upon pastors and evangelists rests the greatest measure of responsibility for the

instruction of the flock of God. It is in a special way theirs to discern the signs of the enemy working and to deliver their people. It is theirs also to teach and to warn of the perils which threaten the spiritually minded."[9]

There is no way to avoid dealing with demons. If one attempts to ignore them, they will not go away. They will intensify their activities. The more completely you are involved with following the Lord Jesus, the more you will encounter these beings as spiritual opponents. As you become more knowledgeable about their workings, they will become more apparent in their defiance of you, and the scope of your victory in Christ will be enlarged over the enemy.

I speak, of course, of outward opposition chiefly. At the same time, the spirits assigned to hinder you covertly will become more devious, seeking to catch you off guard and unawares. That is why we need to maintain a day-by-day, hour-by-hour walk with the Lord in the light of His Word. There must be a total commitment of oneself to Christ. Memorizing and meditating on the Scriptures is an effective way to put up barriers against the inroads of the enemy. Romans 10:17-"Faith comes by hearing and hearing by the Word of God," and this is a faith walk . . . all the way!

". . . and whoso breaketh an hedge, a serpent shall bite him" (Ecclesiastes 10:8).

Into the makeup of every individual I am convinced that God has built in a defense against the unseen world. It acts as a sort of fence or hedge (Job 1:10) around our minds, bodies, and spirits to keep us from perceiving or seeing that which exists in the spiritual dimension. This is wholly for our good, because the unprotected person peeking into the spirit realm can be seriously damaged by such contact. There seem to be several ways in which this protective fence can be lowered or breached by Satan's demon spirits. As Derek

Prince so aptly states: "The devil is no gentleman. He slips in on the slightest pretext, but must be kicked out in the name of Jesus.

Dr. Maxwell Whyte, one of the pioneers in the battle of modern day deliverance, states flatly that any person who has ever gotten mixed up in drugs, alcohol, or immoral sex is definitely demonized and there is no doubt about the need for deliverance in such cases.

Peterson lists "Three forms of sin which constitute an invitation to the demon to have possession: Idolatry is first, for idolatry is the sin of rebellion against the revealed way of worshipping God. 'There shall no strange god be in thee; neither shall thou worship any strange god' (Psalm 81:9; Deuteronomy 13:6-11). Possession often takes place just when the idolator is consorting with sorcerers A second ground for demon possession is the sin of fornication and adultery (Leviticus 20:10; Ephesians 5:3). No other sins have caused so much grief to the human race as these. In one case it was a violent temper outburst which brought on the bout with the demons Drunkenness and drug addiction also open the door for the entrance of demons."[10]

"Idolatry may not be suited for deceiving the so-called 'enlightened' people who regard it as humbug and superstition . . . Satan's deception becomes more subtle as he deals with the educated, religious heathen."[11]

There is no department of a person's being that demons are incapable of affecting if they have the opportunity—whether physical, mental, emotional or psychological. It may be seen in the New Testament how pronounced the effects of evil spirits were in imposing sicknesses and bodily disabilities of a great variety upon their victims.

What we have learned from experience in dealing with demons, Mrs. Penn-Lewis has summed up well: ". They (demons) bury themselves in the very structure of the

human frame, some acting directly upon the organs or appetities of the body, others upon the mind or intellect, sensibilities, emotions and affections, and . . . more immediately upon the spirit . . . They especially locate themselves in the spinal column, nervous system and deepest nerve centres, through which they control the whole being; from the ganglionic nerve centre located in the bowels, the emotional sensibilities, and all organs affected by them, to the cerebral nerve centre in the head, the eyes, ears, neck, jaws, tongue, muscles of the face, and delicate nerve tissues of the brain."[12]

This explains why, in many cases of deliverance, we have seen eyes and ears improved to a marked degree, many pains of various sorts and intensities cease and emotional problems eased. In dealing with drug addicts particularly, there is a necessity to ferret out the spirits that have hidden themselves in the bone marrow and thus affect the bloodstream adversely.

There are also spirits that come in with drugs which attack the reproductive area and unless checked will sometimes work to produce offspring who are deformed and/or retarded. In the case of sexual sin, it is always wise to check spirits of venereal disease, even though the person may never have manifested any signs of the disease.

If a person dabbles with psychic phenomena (spiritism, seances, levitation, necromancy; fortune-telling of any kind, horoscopes and astrology, ouija boards; witchcraft whether black or white, sorcery, fetishes, charms; eastern religious, Zen Buddhism, transcendental meditation, karate, yoga, I Ching, reincarnation; ESP, telepathy, hypnosis; the writings of mystics and psychics such as Jeanne Dixon, Edgar Cayce and others) he can expect to be invaded by these spirits.

As his defenses are dropped by his meddling curiosity, occult spirits can and will enter in and establish themselves.

These are the spirits which travel to the third and fourth generations through the parents (inheritance) because consorting with them breaks the first commandment by contacting another god. A curse from God results (Deuteronomy 18:9-12 and Exodus 20:3-5).

In the beginning, the experimenter with psychic phenomena can control when and to what degree he becomes involved with the occult spirits. However, as he continues on, lured deeper into the mysteries of the spirit world by clever adversaries, his God-given defenses are forced down again and again. Increasingly the demons have free access and control. Before long they will exercise their capricious whims upon the unwitting victim and make a slave-victim of him, driving him ever deeper into the mire of sin and slavery.

They will force him down every path which will cause him to open up to ever increasing spiritual depravity. They may be family life, and afflict him with many hurtful and destructive able systematically to destroy his self-respect, his personal and desires and hungers. In time, spirits of infirmity and sickness will also be brought to attack him to further weaken him. Demons are not satisfied with mere compliance to their wishes; they work to reduce their victim to a helpless state, filled with mental and physical anguish almost beyond man's ability to endure.

According to Mrs. Penn-Lewis, "The suffering caused by evil spirits can be (1) spiritual, by causing acute suffering in the spirit, injecting 'feelings' to the spirit, repugnant or poignant; (2) soulish, by acute darkness, confusion, chaos, horror in the mind; anguished knifelike pain in the heart, or other innermost vital parts of the being; or (3) physical, in any part of the body“ [13]

Frost warns, "One subtle form of soulish behavior is a pseudo-spiritual emphasis that can lead to unwholesome

mysticism. There is usually a great emphasis upon new revelations and spiritual mysteries often accomplished by visions, dreams, and 'prophetic' discourses All such manifestations must be tested by God's Word and discerning Spirit. A further and very practical proof of validity is the fruit produced"[14] (Galatians 5:22).

"So-called spiritual leaders have been seduced into spiritism by approaching the occult from an intellectual (but soulish) point of view. To investigate out of curiosity even borderline areas of parapsychology apart from the spiritual defenses is to invite deception and delusion into one's life. It has happened . . ."[15]

Dr. Unger states that: "Facts are not lacking to indicate that modern spiritism is nothing more or less than ancient sorcery revived, with particular emphasis on communication with the supposed spirits of the dead, which are really deceiving, impersonating demons, so that the phenomenon is basically demonism."[16] Jacobs adds: "When people who are theologically ignorant begin to dabble in matters of the spirit, anything can happen. When starved men finally eat, they may not be able to go about it with cool heads or ready stomachs . . ."[17]

As for the Spiritualist Church which is popping up everywhere nowadays, on page 70 of their Manual they state boldly, "It is the mission of spiritualists to revolutionize the world, to sweep away the accumulated rubbish of centuries of ignorance and superstition." What is this rubbish accumulated over the centuries? Listen to Mrs. M. E. Cadwallader, editor of the "Progressive Thinker," one of the journals of spiritualism: "I denounce the following: the vicarious atonement, the doctrine of eternal punishment, the literal resurrection of the body, the virgin birth of Jesus, the infallibility of the Bible, the doctrine of salvation by faith only. No, the religion of the spiritualists is as different from

the so-called Christian religion as a sunny day is from a starless night."[18]

Willful sin is another open door to the entrance of demonic control, and one willful sin always invites others along with it. Because sin is progressive, one act of disobedience leads to another. "A demon may be secretly welcomed by a prospective host for some selfish reason, therefore, move in; or it may move into the host as an unwelcome intruder. The host, in either case, must deal with the demon's presence Once they have a position in a host, they may invite fellow demons in or may become overly demanding and can cause great trouble. This can lead to the domination of the host's personality either all, or part of the time."[19]

Any habit or desire which has gotten to the point of driving, compelling and tormenting the person is suspect. For this is the way the demon operates. Robert Peterson, missionary to Indonesia, lists a number of the grosser symptoms and manifestations where demons have gained a degree of control: (1) Enlarged eyes and a glassy stare. (2) Fear and intense hatred in the eyes and expression. (3) Flatulence and heavy, labored breathing. (4) A voice apparently not originating from the vocal chords, frequently using a language unknown to the possessed. (5) Abnormal passions seen in such things as the use of vile epithets, drunkenness, drugs, and sexual vices [Luke 8: 27]. (6) Frequent suicidal impulses [Matthew 17:15]. (7) The possessed advances toward one with a wild countenance and often threatening gestures calculated to inspire fear, and when rebuffed, there is a violent display of temper. (8) The demons are able to impart supernatural strength which promotes acts of violence [Matthew 8:28; Mark 5:3; Luke 8:29; Acts 19-16].[20]

As mentioned above, drugs and alcohol depress and weaken God's protective devices for man. Most of the time alcohol works more slowly, but just as surely toward the same end as

drugs. Delerium tremens in an alcoholic is nothing more than seeing into the spirit world. What he sees there with a naked, unprotected mind and soul is enough nearly to drive him out of his mind with terror.

What alcohol does gradually, over a period of time, drugs can accomplish in a matter of minutes, depending on the kind used. The psychedelic-hallucinogenic drugs will lower the screen of protection, allowing demonic forces access to a person and causing him to "see" whatever the demons wish him to experience. They frequently bait the poor deluded victim with "good trips" that reveal whole worlds of blinding colors, sounds, and strange scenes of breathtaking beauty. Since these are fascinating to the depraved nature of man, the individual submits again and again. The victim may even have visions of "God," angels and Heaven, deceiving and misleading.

It will not be long, however, before the demons tire of this sport and begin to show their cruel and destructive nature. As they drop their masks of beauty and euphoria, the dupe is subjected to ugliness, laced with horror or unbridled terror. This is intended to drive him toward insanity and/or suicide. As the Bible says about alcohol: "Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging, and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise" (Proverbs 20:1). The same is true of drugs. The difference is that, with drugs, it is almost instant insanity; with alcohol, the process usually takes longer, a kind of creeping, sure deterioration. The end is the same. Destruction and misery are in their ways, and the way of peace have they not known.

I recall a young Navy lad in his twenties who came to my home one night to get help for himself and his wife. He was taking drugs, mostly "grass" (marijuana) and "acid" (LSD). A few months earlier, while tripping on acid, he had experienced a fantastically beautiful experience. It had

begun in horror, with an angelic guide escorting him to see the pits of hell. Next he was taken to a realm where he saw "heaven" and met "God." The god he met was an exceedingly dazzling creature who informed him in dulcet tones that all the young man had to do was to put his trust in him and all would be well. He would not go to hell, but rather come to this beautiful place, aglow with beauty and light. He was to go forth to enlist others to come here too (II Corinthians 11:14). This was his "conversion" experience and his "call" to preach, as he told it to me.

The reason he had come for help was that, in spite of these lovely experiences (which were repeated each time he tripped on drugs) he was deeply troubled. Restless and unhappy unless on drugs, he could neither pray nor have any sort of communication with "God" when he was "straight." A growing sense of uneasiness, a gnawing emptiness, a total absence of peace, and a burning desire to return to drugs were all that he had to show for his experiences. Somehow he knew this was wrong, and it caused him to seek help.

My first task was to lead him to see that he had never been born again at all and had no evidence of Bible salvation. He was the victim of a real, but counterfeit, religious experience of "conversion," totally foreign to Scriptures.

I read Revelation 3:20 to him: "Behold, I stand at the door and knock; if any man hear my voice and open the door, I will come in." I explained that he must personally and definitely invite Jesus Christ to come into his heart and save him from his sin (Romans 3:23; 6:23). After a bit of patient reviewing of the verses, the Holy Spirit enlightened his understanding, the blindness fell from his mind (II Corinthians 4:4) and he grasped the simple truth of the Gospel. It began to dawn on him that he had been defrauded by cunning, deceiving religious spirits into accepting a pseudo-conversion experience.

After being convinced of the truth of the Scripture, he attempted to ask Jesus Christ to come into his heart. This caused unbelieveable distress and difficulty. He could hardly talk but gasped out words haltingly and with long drawn out syllables as the demons who had captured him through drugs fought to prevent his acceptance of the Saviour. I had to rebuke and bind the hindering spirits in Jesus' name before he finally got the words out, "Lord Jesus, please come into my heart and save me from my sins right now.'

When he did this, great peace filled his soul; his burden lifted and his awful fears of the future vanished. After making sure that he had the assurance that Jesus had come into his heart, I turned to his wife who was trembling uncontrollably. She, too, was eager to be saved and quickly asked Jesus to come into her heart. They began to embrace, laughing and crying with relief and great joy, praising the Lord Jesus, from Whom the deep settled peace had come upon their troubled souls. I had the joy of casting out demons from each of them that night. Some hours later they left, rejoicing in all that Jesus Christ had done for them.

"Some individuals are so bound they may have almost lost their will to the power of the enemy. God can set them free by the prayer of faith and the authority of Jesus' name. Such release, however, can be maintained only if they choose to remain free. . . "[21] If we are willing to be dominated, we can be dominated, but if we want to enjoy the reality of that which is ours, we can. James wrote, "Resist the devil and he will flee from you." James 4:7 has the order right-first we submit to God, then we resist the devil. This fierce enemy cannot stand before us then.

Frost writes that "the demons hate and fear believers." They know that they are defeated, but this does not stop them from continuing their work-until their defeat is enforced upon them by faithful believers.[22]

Although ministers and workers are often able to help others, God wants His children to grow up in Him and in a knowledge of His Word and to be able to exercise authority over Satan. This is the authority of the believer, not just of the preachers and special workers.

"We are assured that there can be some weakening of demon powers by refusing to give them the cooperation they thrive upon: "They feed on our fears and self-directed thoughts. (See I John 4:18-"fear hath torment"). Our power to resist and overcome increases as we feed upon God's truth and give attention to His Son by much praise and worship. Our faith becomes strong by praying in the Spirit" [23]

"The thief comes not but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I am come that they might have life and that they might have it more abundantly" (John 10:10).

[1]From Demons, Their Origin, Their Work, Their End by Dr. John Zollar, copyright 1972 by Christ for Everyone, New Era, Mich. 49446. Used by permission. p. 21,

[2]From War on the Saints, by Jesse Penn-Lewis, 1973 by Thos. E. Lowe, Suite 1500, 2 Penn Pl., N.Y., N.Y. 10001. Used by permission. p. 69.

[3]Ibid., pp. 226, 227.

[4]From Are Demons for Real? by Robert Peterson, copyright 1968 by Overseas Miss. Fellowship, Moody Press, Chicago. Used by permission. p. 97.

[5]From The Overflowing Life by Robert Frost, copyright 1971 by Log International, Plainfield, N.J. 07060. Reprinted by permission. p. 87.

[6]Penn-Lewis, op. cit., p. 135.

[7]Ibid., p. 149.

[8]From Modern Demon Possession by A. J. MacMillan copyright by Christian Pu Harrisburg, Pa. 17101. Used by permission. p. 12.

[9]Ibid., p. 12.

[10]Peterson, op. cit., p. 121.

[11]Ibid., p. 94.

[12]Penn-Lewis, op. cit., p. 163.

[13]Ibid., p. 65.

[14]Frost, op. cit., p. 85.

[15]Ibid., p. 86.

[16]From Biblical Demonology by Merrill F. Unger, copyright 1952 by Scripture P Wheaton, Ill. p. 158.

[17]From Demons at Work in the World Today by Donald R. Jacobs, copyright by Herald Press, Scottsdale, Pa. 15683. Reprinted by permission. pp. 37, 3 18 Zollar, op. cit., p. 38.

[19]Jacobs, op. cit., p. 26. 20 Peterson, op. cit., p. 116.

[21]Frost, op. cit., p. 105.

[22]Ibid., p. 49.

[23]Ibid., p. 105.

Chapter 8

DANGER: BACKLASH

As hornets will attack anyone who disturbs their nest, so demons will viciously attack those who dare to invade the kingdom of Satan to free the captives. This is not stated to frighten or dismay, only as a sober word of warning and caution. Engaging with the powers of the spirit world is not game; it is a deadly serious undertaking. We learned the hard a way about the danger from malevolent demon spirits to the workers, physically, mentally and spiritually.

It is most foolhardy to underestimate the foe and his ability to counterattack. And counterattack he will, the severity of his blows being proportionate to the damage inflicted on his forces by the awakened believers. The more damage that is dealt to the kingdom of the prince of this world, the more severe you may expect his efforts at retaliation to be.

Keep in mind that the fighting that takes place in this contest will not be fought according to any rules with which you are likely to be familiar. Satan will stoop to any tactic to repel you and other workers who come against him and his kingdom. He is the original rule breaker, and he will not hesitate to exploit any weakness you have. No slackness in your spiritual life will be overlooked in an effort to gain some advantage over you.

Remember the example of Elijah who engaged in warfare at a high level against the ruling powers of darkness. He came to the absolute peak of victory over the false prophets on Mount Carmel, putting them to open shame, but a short time later he was so totally demoralized by a threat from wicked Jezebel that he prayed to die! (IKings 19:1-4). If we are not careful, while we are praising and thanking God for victory, Satan will slip in upon us (by the working of his hosts) and

seek to deal dreadful and hurtful blows to body, mind or spirit. These can reduce our rejoicing to shambles in short order.

In this battle, no quarter is asked or given. It is all-out, total warfare. Woe to the unprepared!

Christians certainly have thoroughly adequate protection available, but they are sometimes unfamiliar with the power available to them and how to effectively channel it. The enemy forces know all about the power they possess and how to extract the maximum advantage from it. They will try to seize on our every weakness, ignorance or carelessness to their interest. Workers must not be frightened off by fiery trials, for they are certain to come (I Peter 4:12). We are promised blessings with persecutions (Mark 10:30).

All of the raging mischief and overt hatred of the enemy is a sure sign that his interests are being seriously affected and overthrown. Yet, in the beginning especially, the recoil and counterattacks of the devil and his hosts can seem to be terribly harsh. Lucifer is a firm believer that an ounce of prevention is worth a pound of cure; he responds quickly to the *first* evidence of any real attack on his evil kingdom. In concept, he would believe in shooting a plane while it is taxiing or attempting to take off, rather than waiting until it is airborne. We venture into this kind of work by being borne along by the power of the Holy Spirit (Greek Haggais Pneumos-Holy Wind) and we are lifted far above the limitations of our human flesh and frailties. We go aloft as eagles do, borne upon the wind.

Away with foolish pride and the self-sufficiency of mere mortal men. It will not avail here. Only spiritually enlightened minds and humble hearts, filled with God-given compassion for the tormented captives, can hope to stand before the rage of this crafty and virulent foe.

When you begin to cast out demons, there will be severe repercussions as Satan mounts the offensive, seeking any vulnerable areas in the total being of the believer. If personal harassment will not deter the believer from pursuing spiritual warfare, the devil will broaden the scope of his offensive and will attack through your family and other professing believers.

I, my family, and our church workers who became involved in deliverance were all subjected to severe, repeated and bizarre attacks, when we first launched into casting out demons. And we still periodically have weird attacks. Apparitions; physical pains and sickness; the sound of footsteps; nightmares while awake as well as during sleep; black figures bounding all over the bed pummeling you, ghostly hands touching; voices whispering; panting hot breath on the face; waves of icy air moving across and around you; growlings, roarings, snortings, bellowing, and so forth. I do not exaggerate. All of these and more have been used in Satan's program of harassment. Cold, raw terror to induce fear is one of his favorite approaches. Fear throws a person off balance, paralyzes his defenses, and makes him more susceptible to other attacks. This fear does not come from the Lord, but from the devil for the Bible declares "God has not given us the spirit of fear..." (II Timothy 1:7).

Dreams can be divine, in which the person is left normal, calm, quiet, reasonable, and with an open, clear mind. Satanic dreams are noted for their mystery, absurdity, emptiness, folly, and leave the person elated or dazed, confused and unreasonable. Sleeplessness, too, can be a source of distress. "Insomnia may be the work of evil spirits, adapting their workings to the overwrought condition of the person, so as to hide their attacks under cover. Believers who

are open to the supernatural world should specially guard their nights by prayer." [1]

If any of this happens to you, coolly, calmly, even with hair prickling on your neck and chills coursing through your body, you must take the offensive, using the name of Jesus as your combination shield and battering ram. Pray and praise Him for His blood, eternal life, salvation full and free, and claim His protection from the hosts of darkness. Rebuke Satan and his hosts and take authority over them in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ as a believer priest (Revelation 1:6; 5:10). Command the spirits to leave you (I John 4:4). You may have to repeat this several times. Be persistent. They will be reluctant to obey. They also sometimes linger to see if you really believe what you are saying.

I have awakened, usually between 3 and 4 a.m., to find myself held in a vice-like grip by icy hands: my hands, feet, mouth and throat all held tightly, so that I could neither move nor make a sound; and I assure you that I was not dreaming but was wide awake. My body prickled with fear from head to toe.

One rule you must follow: Never panic. Refuse to stampede. Pray in the name of Jesus, pleading the blood and thanking God for Jesus and salvation in your mind, even if your throat and voice temporarily will not function. Take authority over the spirit forces, rebuking them in the name of Jesus. They will release you and retreat as you prove that you are not going to let them gain a foothold of fear from which to harass you.

As your faith and confidence builds in the sufficiency of the Saviour ("If thou canst believe, all things are possible." Matthew 19:26; Mark 9:23; 10:27) the praise of Jesus Christ and a love for Him will erect a shield which spiritual forces are unable to overcome (Psalm 22:3-5). Such attacks will continue until Satan is convinced that you will persevere in

the warfare, no matter what he throws against you. So do not accept a premature "truce".

His next tactic is to shift his pressure point, seeking any weakness. He will accelerate his war with you, pressing you in areas of your personal, family, business, and spiritual life to destroy you. This can literally crowd you to Christ for fellowship and protection. This end result explains why God permits him to harass you so-to drive you to Himself, thus frustrating the "destroyer" in his plans. When men stand faithful, the enemy never wins.

But you must recognize how Satan deploys his troops in an all-out attempt to convince you to turn back from your course. By crushing pressure, harassment, depression, oppression, and all sorts of crippling attacks, he will come at you. Your only recourse in the midst of this bombardment will be to claim with the Psalmist: “I will say of the Lord, He is my refuge and my fortress; my God; in him will I trust. Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler and from the noisesome pestilence. He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust: his truth shall be thy shield and buckler There shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling, for he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways" (Psalm 91:2-6, 10-11).

The pressures of the enemy are arranged to stop you from pursuing real spiritual warfare. So no matter what area of your life is under attack, it is all part of a cunningly devised strategy to stop you from rescuing the oppressed. Do count the cost (Luke 14:28), then determine by God's grace that you will go on. Decide whether the deliverance of many lives from Satan's bondage is worth the effort, the misunderstanding, and hatred that will surely be your lot (John 15:18, 24; 17:14).

Ministers and other godly people may line up in horror against you in this undertaking. It is contrary to their experience and their expectation. They are seemingly impervious to the fact that the deliverance ministry is definitely spelled out in example, precept and command in the Bible, and is desperately needed in these last days. Keep in mind that these truths are spiritually discerned (I Corinthians 2:14-15;3:1) and that until the Holy Spirit breaks through prejudice, fears, and ignorance. Blinded minds will not comprehend and understand. Indeed, some of those who attack you will think they do God a service! Some opponents will fall into the sad category of those whom Paul calls enemies of the cross (Philippians 3:18). Do not waste time trying to categorize the attackers. Ignore them and press on with Jesus Christ.

We need not fear the enemy, but we had certainly better respect him. We need not cower before him, but it is gross stupidity to misjudge the foe. Deliverance is not some Sunday school picnic to be approached lightheartedly as an exciting lark, but is a deadly serious and dangerous business, raw open warfare with the forces of hell. I repeat, in this battle no quarter is asked or given. It is all out, total warfare. Woe to the unprepared!

Since the entire wisdom and cunning of Satan is arrayed against us, the only way we can possibly meet the enemy is by the appropriation of supernatural power and wisdom from Jesus Christ through the Holy Spirit and the Word of God. No victory is possible without the authority and power of the Lord Jesus Christ (Ephesians 1:19-21; Philippians 2:9, 10). He alone is capable of overcoming Satan and gave us this assurance: “I have given you authority over all the power of the enemy. . . and nothing by any means shall hurt you" (Luke 10:19, 20).

Keep in mind that you are not exempt from attacks in the areas of your former weaknesses and bondage. Watch as well as pray. Demons are extremely sensitive in such matters and know well when they are approached by one who has been delivered from their kindred spirits. They express a particularly virulent hatred for and fear of that individual.

Do demons attempt a comeback after expulsion? Yes, in every case I know of. It is wise also to remember that physical weakness makes it more difficult to resist the attacks of the Evil One, and even when victory seems secure, the demons will often attempt to return. God does not free an individual to walk away in carelessness or rebellion, but to live in joyful obedience to Him.

Check yourself and gird on the armor tightly before you enter the fray, for there will be no time once the battle is joined. Woe to the one who enters the conflict lightheartedly or rashly, with some pieces of the armor askew or missing. Be clean before the Lord (1 John 1:9). Demons can ask some embarassing questions of the workers if they choose. They can spot a phony immediately.

"Put on all of God's armor so that you will be able to stand safe against all strategies and tricks of Satan. For we are not fighting against people made of flesh and blood, but against persons without bodies-the evil rulers of the unseen world, those mighty Satanic beings and great evil princes of darkness who rule this world; and against huge numbers of wicked spirits in the spirit world. So use every piece of God's armor to resist the enemy whenever he attacks, and when it is all over, you will still be standing up" (Ephesians 6:11-13, Living Bible).

Being kicked, cursed, spit upon, threatened, and attacked in many ways by monstrous spiritual forces is not some believers idea of serving God. Safe in their ivory towers of theological deadness and unreality, they pontificate against

those "fanatics" and "deluded ones" who would have the audacity to take the Bible seriously and believe that God meant what He said and said what He meant, even about the dark forces of the spiritual world. The Bible was written in simple language for average people. Most of the precious truths are easily obtainable for anyone willing to take the Holy Spirit for his guide, who will seek wisdom from the One Who promised to give wisdom without upbraiding (James 1:5).

There is a peril in failing to take action against the foe, as the Lord warned in speaking of His wrath against Moab: “Cursed be those withholding their sword from your blood, refusing to do the work that God has given them" (Jeremiah 48:10, Living Bible).

Although I generally do not utilize form prayers, feeling that they all too often degenerate into ritualistic mouthings, I here include Michael Harper's suggested prayer for one preparing for spiritual warfare. It does contain all of the elements you need to pray about in this type of work. Rote repetition will not be of value (Matthew 6:7), but as a reminder of essentials, this may be helpful:

"Lord Jesus, I claim by faith now the protection of Your armor, that I may stand against Satan and all his hosts, and in the name of Jesus overcome them. I take Your truth to counter the lies and errors of a cunning enemy. I take Your righteousness to overcome the evil thought and accusations of Satan. I take the equipment of the gospel of peace and forsake the safety and comforts of life in order to wage war with the enemy. Above all, I take Your faith to bar the way to doubts and unbelief entering my mind. I take Your salvation and trust You to protect my body, soul and spirit from Satan's varied attacks. I take Your Word and pray that the Holy Spirit will enable me to use it effectively against the enemy to sever every bondage and deliver every captive of

Satan. In the strong and all conquering name of Jesus Christ my Lord, Amen."[2]

In a prolonged deliverance session (which may stretch into hours) your body and mind will become fatigued and incredibly weary. The struggle with spiritual forces will easily be one of the most draining and exhausting exercises you will ever experience. This can be dangerous for you personally (as I pointed out earlier in the diary section). If you relax your spiritual guards and shields, even briefly, know that a cunning and incredibly vicious intelligence is monitoring the whole affair, whose aim is to determine when to order an attack on the attackers.

Often the question is posed: "Why the long drawn-out sessions of battle with the enemy?" Some piously remark that there is no record of Jesus or the others in Scripture going through such a struggle. "Why not just speak the word and command them to leave?"

It may be that we will someday attain the spiritual level (and perhaps some have) where we can consistently do this. If the demons will flee without a commotion, fine! I have witnessed hundreds leave with little or no fuss and manifestation, but others, the deep-rooted ones, more powerful (especially the ones associated with lust, the occult, religion and pride) seem to burrow in and will put up a strong battle before leaving. Jesus said that some demons can be cast out only with prayer and fasting (Mark 9:29).

It is possible that we are not yet ready for such absolute power (and I speak of my own group) lest our foolish hearts be puffed up with pride. Those who say you should never argue with or otherwise engage the enemy in a pitched battle merely indicate to me that they have not gone very far into the business of spiritual warfare. We have had many individuals come to us, still unrelieved from problems, after they had been confidently patted on the head elsewhere and

told that it was done, and to claim the victory by faith. When we prayed with them, fierce and vicious demons answered us and began to talk and argue before being thrown out. They were not removed by bland smiles and form prayers, but by spiritual battle.

When dealing with a person through whom you expect demonic response, it is wise first to bind the strong man (Matthew 12:29) before beginning to pray. A prayer similar to this may prove useful: "Satan, I rebuke you in Jesus' name and command you and all free demons around us to be bound and prevented from interfering or intervening in the deliverance of this person. I claim the promise that whatever I bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, in Jesus' name." This can often reduce the violence of the deliverance, although the personality, power grip of the demon on the life involved influences this also.

Keep in mind that a ruler spirit may have a legion or more of demons under his control. If you successfully bind the commander, you will hinder all those under his command from functioning. To illustrate, a controlling demon we dealt with (a spirit of Mind Control) had command of entire legions that were under his direct control. Under his supervision were other rulers: Hate, Pride, Martial Arts (Karate, Judo, JuJitsu), each having many subordinate spirits. By binding the controlling demon we were then able to attack the others. The pressure on Mind Control became so intense that, in order to gain relief, he ordered Hate, Pride, and Martial Arts to leave with their spirits. They were furious but had to obey. Screaming, protesting, and spewing out obscenities, they reluctantly left.

Then, as we badgered Mind Control with questions and prayers, he was forced to release a part of his own supporting force of many legions. When the Holy Spirit confused him and made his mind reel (in answer to prayer)

he often would answer questions, in violation of his determination neither to talk with me nor to divulge any information. When this happened, he I would stiffen with awful agony, groaning convulsively. His hatred for me knew no bounds and was like a physical force stabbing at my forehead, a pressure similar to being prodded by a broomstick. Through the victim's gritted teeth he explained that in punishment for blundering and yielding before a mortal's attack, Satan had subtracted a portion of his forces from him and sent them out into the world.

He had worked, he boasted, to garner power to himself and his authority was indeed impressive, but Satan has no mercy on the embattled demons when they fail. Even when Satan's promised reinforcements fail to appear, he still severely chastises those who do not win-there are no excuses for failure among Satan's hosts!

Toward the end of the session, the demon slipped and revealed more information (all under severe spiritual pressure) and Lucifer subtracted six legions in punishment. He groaned with awful pain when this happened. At the end of the session, only twenty-seven of his forty-five legions remained. All is was made possible by binding the ruler spirit.

In deliverance, the best approach is always to press for the expulsion of the demon. However, if, due to the weariness of the workers, physical exhaustion, shortness of time, or other factors, an alternative course must be pursued, you may take authority and bind the manifesting demons. If you have to close the session before the deliverance is completed, make every effort to bind all demons still present in the person. In doing so it is good to list the demons who have revealed their names.

In one case, a young man came to the house for help but could stay only a short time because of his work. Demons

manifested themselves and some were cast out. The more resistant ones I bound, praying, "Satan, I come against you and the spirits of (naming certain ones) and I command that they be bound in the name of Jesus. By binding I mean that you are not to harass, torment, or manifest in any way in this man until you are called out in deliverance. Further, I forbid you to communicate with your rulers, your princes, each other or this man. You are to sit in silence and be alone [demons hate being alone]. I command this to be so, and order it to be done in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. I claim the promise that whatever I bind on earth shall be bound in Heaven. Be bound in Jesus' name!" Again, some demons will resist this binding savagely, but keep insisting and praying for their binding. They will submit. When they do, the person will "surface" and aside from being exhausted from the struggle, should feel peaceful and calm.

In this particular case I had overlooked some evil spirits that had been discovered but not cast out. Not being bound, they attacked the man that night with severe pains in the stomach and legs, causing something akin to near paralysis in the limbs of his body. He came back and I discovered that the bound spirits were still bound, seething with rage and frustration, I bound the loose demons causing the trouble; the pains and all and we sent them all out in Jesus' name. symptoms immediately ceased. He came later for deliverance,

Let us face an awful fact. Many Christians are just plain lazy. They do not come down from the "rafters of righteousness" to become involved in anything so undignified, and which carries as much reproach from the world, as does battle with demonic spirits. Indignantly they draw back from an encounter which might rumple their carefully pressed clothes and rob them of sleep and their religious lethargy.

There are times when I almost wish it was as simple as the critics say that there is no such thing as spiritual warfare for Christians, or that the demons obediently and instantly hop out when some supercharged Christian appears on the scene. No account I have read, written by anyone who has ever actually dealt with demons, will fail to "clue you in" that there is a real war here, not a polite little skirmish. There is no "nice" way to clean out a septic tank and in deliverance, we are, in a sense, pumping out the demonic sewage and filth accumulated in persons who need help. To people who raise their hands in horror at the fact that deliverances take place regularly in our church services, I reply that Jesus and his followers performed deliverances in the public streets and at least ours are inside a building!-for now at least.

Although I have not had the years of experience that he has, I understand Dr. Koch's statement: "As a result of my work among the occultly oppressed and the possessed, I am sometimes stretched to the very limits of my physical, mental and spiritual powers. If it were not for the fact that the Lord has held His hand over me in the past, I would have been ruined long ago. 'For I, saith the Lord, will be unto her a wall of fire round about, and will be the glory in the midst of her' " (Zechariah 2:5).[3]

You may be sure that after hours of bitter struggling, straining every physical, mental and spiritual muscle you own, you will have very little pride in your own ability left. You will also have no doubts about Who and what turned the victory against the supernatural foe. There is no need to explain to a "combat soldier" in these struggles that without the mighty power of the name and the blood of Jesus Christ, His protecting angels, and the strengthening enabling of the Holy Spirit, we would be utterly helpless and easily wiped out. If these mighty lords of darkness could really get at the workers, they would tear them to pieces.

After the combat, you are extremely conscious that the power came through, but was not of you. You are the pipe, not the water; the instrument, not the surgeon. So it is always, in order that glory and honor and praise be given to the Lord Jesus Who alone is worthy (Revelation 4:11). The religious crowd will leave you, but be not dismayed. They have always shied away from anyone who follows the Lord too closely. Among them you will find those who will ardently persecute, rather than to concede that their position may be wrong.

[1]From War on the Saints by Jesse Penn-Lewis, copyright 1973 by Thos. E. Lowe, 1500, 2 Penn Pl., N.Y., N.Y. 10001. Used by permission. p. 153.

[2]From Spiritual Warfare by Michael Harper, copyright 1970 by Michael Harper, Plainfield, N.J. 07060. Reprinted by permission. p. 106.

[3]From Occult Bondage and Deliverance by Kurt Koch, copyright 1970 by Kregel Pub., Grand Rapids, Mich. 40503. p. 110.

Chapter 9

DELIVERANCE: A WALK, NOT AN EVENT

Isaiah 41:10-13-"Fear thou not; for I am with thee; be not dismayed for I am thy God: I will strengthen thee; yea, I will help thee; yea, I will uphold thee with the right hand of my righteousness. Behold, all they that were incensed against thee shall be ashamed and confounded: they shall be as nothing; and they that strive with thee shall perish. Thou shalt seek them, and shalt not find them, even them that contended with thee. They that war against thee shall be as nothing, and as a thing of nought. For I the Lord thy God will hold thy right hand, saying unto thee, Fear not, I will help thee."

Demons are enemies who interfere, to a greater or lesser degree, with the right exercise of human faculties (mental, physical or soulish, including emotions, desires or feelings) and in so doing achieve at least three ends: They defy God's will and purpose for man, they afflict their victims and satisfy themselves, and they particularly block or hinder the exercise of these faculties for the highest end for which they were made—fellowship with and service to the living God.

Yet for all their fierce determination, these are enemies who are vulnerable and can be completely routed! In the very place where their presence once seemed so dominant and cruel, they can be weakened and then driven out so that they are no more found in that place. That is the great, initial object of deliverance—complete expulsion of evil spirits and the restoration of an individual's faculties to his own volitional use so that they may be rightly exercised.

I say initial object because deliverance is a whole new walk with the Lord, not an isolated event. It is by the character of his daily walk that an individual is enabled to maintain his

deliverance once it has been fully obtained. We are not set free so that we may enjoy ourselves-though it is certain that we will enjoy life far more after deliverance-but that we may fully and freely worship, follow after and serve the Lord. Any lesser, purely self-interested motive is not the right basis for proceeding with the ministry of deliverance. This does not mean, of course, that a person must be disinterested or somehow detached from an intense longing to be free. The opposite is true: Deliverance must be earnestly desired and sought at all costs. There can be no standing on ideas of propriety, or on false religious concepts, "piousity" or any other hindering attitude if deliverance is to be effected.

Once it has been started, deliverance may not come all at once. Derek Prince points out that, "It is important to realize that deliverance is normally a process. . . It may be brief, or long and drawn out. . . intense and dramatic, or it may be quiet and scarcely perceptible. But whenever a person is delivered from a demon, there is some definite experience or reaction. Where there is no definite experience or reaction, it is questionable whether deliverance has really been effected . . ."[1] In some cases, there will be only an outbreathing, but there should be definite relief experienced in the person when the demons leave. In other words, no difference, no deliverance!

In a sense, a person with a demon is similar to a spring of water which is choked and clogged with leaves and other debris. This cuts the flow to a mere trickle and discolors the water as well. When the spring is cleaned out and gobs of trash removed, several things happen. For a time the spring is cloudy, muddy, and disturbed. Soon, however, as the water flow increases in volume, the vacancy left by the trash is filled in and finally the spring overflows. This flushes out the remaining bits of foreign matter, which are carried away by the flow, and the bubbling spring which has been set free

clarifies itself. After the cloudiness disappears, other bits and pieces of half buried leaves and twigs can be easily spotted and removed.

A clearing from demons operates in a similar fashion. An initial clean-out of spirits will break up Satan's major hold on the life and it can be drastic and spectacular in effect. Yet it is not surprising or unusual for the individual to find other spirits, perhaps inactive or hindered in their work, still clinging on, burrowed in. They should be dealt with as they are discovered, and expelled in Jesus' name also.

Another illustration may be helpful. Removing a demon can be likened to getting the "core" from a boil. Until the boil is "ripe" the complete "core" cannot be removed. In the case of demon exorcism, it is necessary for the tormented one to be totally committed to renunciation of the demons and all of their manifestations. Psalm 139:21-23 expresses the necessary heart attitude of those seeking freedom: "O Lord, shouldn't I hate those who hate you? Shouldn't I be grieved with them? Yes, I hate them, for your enemies are my enemies too. Search me, O God, and know my heart, test my thoughts" (Living Bible).

As Derek Prince often remarks, "God will deliver you from your enemies, never from your friends." You must declare God's enemies (the demons) to be your enemies and then you have a right to claim Joel 2:32. Until a person is desperate for deliverance, it will not come. No one who comes casually or out of idle curiosity need expect help from the Lord. Slaves who love their chains can never be free, but for those who groan under their bondage and are seeking with all their hearts for freedom, Jesus breaks every fetter!

In the case of major surgery in a hospital, often a patient has not one, but a series of operations, with time allowed between operations for recuperation. In like manner, believers with deep seated "nests" of demons may be cleaned

up in stages and progressively freed of demons. I have witnessed many deliverances which were halted deliberately by the Lord, and the subject filled with peace and joy and blessing. Later on, perhaps days, weeks, or even months later, other spirits would manifest and be dealt with.

Why should this be? Perhaps it is a combination of things. It would be terribly hard on the individual physically to remove all of them at once. People who have demons cast out are physically exhausted by the experience. Also, there must be an ability to withstand the attempts of the demons to return to the clean house bringing seven worse spirits with them (Luke 11:25).

The loving hand of God measures out the amount of pressure which we are capable of bearing, with His help (I Peter 5:7). If He is careful to see that we are never overloaded and crushed by the enemy in the matter of temptation (I Corinthians 10:13), does it not follow logically that He would also operate on this same principle in the matter of demon expulsion? Jesus told His disciples, "I have yet many things to say to you, but ye cannot bear them now" (John 16:12). A hand of infinite patience and compassionate understanding measures our capabilities against our trials. May God give to us this same tenderhearted love and long suffering with those tormented ones to whom we minister.

In Exodus 23:29, 30 God says plainly of the enemies of God's people: "I will not drive them out from before thee in one year; lest the land become desolate, and the beasts of the field multiply against thee. By little and little I will drive them out from before thee, until thou be increased, and inherit the land." Although He is talking to Israel about their physical land and possessing it, the parallel is quite obvious in the matter of a Christian becoming free of demonic "beasts" (I Corinthians 15:32).

By blinding many believers, including sincere and dedicated ones, to the reality of demonic operations, Satan has thereby prevented their uniting to attack his strongholds to free the captives who have already been redeemed from sin through salvation of the soul. Too often the body and mind remain in bondage to the demonic.

The land was given to Israel, but she had to go up actively and aggressively against the "giants in the land" and possess her inheritance. She was not to do this on her own but by acting in concert with the mighty God. So believers are charged with the responsibility for following Joshua (the Old Testament form of the name of Jesus) across the river by supernatural power and engaging the demonic foe.

All of the inhabitants (trespassers and interlopers) in the land were to be rooted out and destroyed utterly. Even so, every demonic enemy within is to be hunted down and expelled. Incomplete obedience in this matter led Israel to experience defeat and weakness.

So it will be with believers. Any demon left to dwell within will be the source of misery and defeat to his host. God speed the day when the walls of partition will break by the power of the Holy Spirit, so that believers may join against the common foe, not in an ecumenical super-church, but in Spirit and in truth.

Developing strength takes time. Learning the Scriptures that are effective in turning back particular demons is crucial to victory and the successful holding of the deliverance gained. I believe God tests people to see how faithful they will be to serve the Lord and the church of Jesus Christ before He completes the work. God does not clean a person up and fill him with fire to toot his whistle and ring his bell, but He intends him to pull freight for the Lord Jesus.

As important as it is, the casting out of demons is not a shortcut to sanctification. Robert Frost points out that,

"Some people, in blaming demons for everything, fail to see they are avoiding their responsibility to face themselves before the Lord. It is easier to obtain 'instant holiness' through an exorcism than it is to submit daily to the sanctifying power of the Holy Spirit that we might take up our cross and follow Jesus. The prayer chair of deliverance can never substitute for the day-by-day ministry of the cross in our lives."[2] "Some individuals are so bound they may almost have lost their will to the power of the enemy. God can set them free by the prayer of faith and the authority of Jesus' name Such a release however, can be maintained only if they choose to remain free. . .“[3]

Although it is God's will to bless His creatures, He did not create a race of robots, but beings with the power to choose and to will. He never violates the human will, but respects it. Satan, on the other hand, works constantly to subvert, to trick and in every way to coerce the human will into submission to his will so that he may work his destructive purposes upon men. The Lord calls for a willing, intelligent yielding to and cooperation with the Holy Spirit Who teaches us from the Word of God to walk in God's ways. The devil drives; the Holy Spirit leads. Satan threatens, blusters and bullies; the Holy Spirit reassures, loves and gently reproves.

There is strength in surrender, if that surrender is to the Lord Jesus Christ. Even then, it is not a blind, mindless move of abject slavery, but a loving and thoughtful submission to the Lord of all creation, Jesus Christ. It is not in vain that the Word declares, “Come now and let us reason together " for our God is one of reason and His ways make good sense. Only the devil insists on a blind, unquestioning obedience, and the blotting out and enslaving of the human personality. God works in and through the human personality to reproduce the image of His dear Son.

The individual who is a victim of demons must exercise his will, as far as he has power to do so, toward God and against evil Spirits. Even the Gadarene demoniac, in his violent and extremely tortured state, rushed toward Jesus for help: "no man could bind him, no, not with chains . . . But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him" (Mark 5:3, 6).

Since demons do not possess unlimited or purely arbitrary power to afflict humans if they did, life would be a living hell for everybody attention must be paid not only to the fact of occupation but to the cause as well. There is some antecedent cause in virtually every case. The cause may rest in some evil indulged in by the victim, but that is not invariably the case, since family causes or curses supply a basis for demonic activity, too.

Mrs. Penn-Lewis states: "When the spirits of evil see their hold coming to an end, they never let go until the cause is fully removed, and they continue to attack if the thing they have attacked about still exists in any degree.“

That is why "it is essential that believers should understand the value of the act of refusal," the writer points out, continuing, "Evil spirits have gained by the believer giving them ground, right of way, use of their faculties, etc., and they lose when this is all withdrawn from them."[4]

We must withdraw from the enemy all ground which they can use to work against us. Although they are a defeated foe in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, they will put up a determined fight to prevent the areas of the life they have controlled from being taken back and surrendered to Jesus Christ.

When a believer begins to see that he has a right to determine the choice and that he does not have to accept the maneuverings of Satan then the battle really begins. It helps if he will verbally assert his resistance to Satan and his emissaries, stating that he refuses the will of Satan and

accepts the will of God for his life, before he knows what either Satan or God has planned for him (See Appendix).

This works well in practice. One of our young men was having real difficulties in certain areas of his life and determined to verbally claim the will of God and reject the will and plans of Satan for his life. He did this many times during the course of the day and had amazing results. It really worked and relieved the pressures of temptations. After about a month of this, a demon surfaced at one of our services and began to angrily rant at me. He was furious because I had explained this procedure from the pulpit and "this stupid fool" had picked it up. The evil spirit was so thoroughly upset that he sneeringly complained, "All I hear all day long is, 'I reject you and your traps and snares for me Satan. I accept your will Lord. I love You and want only You.' I hate it, I hate it!"

It is important for the victim of demonic activity to resist false accusations made against him. Remember that one of the adversary's favorite tactics is slander. He does this directly, through insinuations in the mind. He also uses human instruments to push his lies and half-truths on the person under attack. Be sure that the accusation is justified, and is not from lying spirits, before accepting it. If indeed guilty, I John 1:9 provides God's remedy, and the sin must be confessed and forsaken and God's full and free forgiveness gratefully accepted.

If, following sincere repentance and confession, the guilt and feeling of condemnation continues to nag at a person, then it becomes obvious that it is a false charge from the enemy and not from the Lord. God the Holy Spirit, charged with the ministry of conviction of sin, never nags nor does He persecute the sinner. When a sin is genuinely confessed and forsaken, it is forgiven and will never be charged to the believer again. The devil is the only one who will continually

haunt the individual with tormenting fears about a lack of forgiveness. Ask God for enlightenment as to the hidden causes of the pressures (John 3:21). As in the nets and snares of Satan, it is possible to reject the source of the attack even when you do not know the cause, and to ask that God destroy the root of the upsetting thing.

"If the believer accepts the self-depreciation suggested to him and created by the evil spirits, it brings an atmosphere of hopelessness and weakness about him and he conveys to others a spirit of darkness and heaviness, sadness and grief. His spirit is easily crushed, wounded and depressed . An abnormal sense of suffering is one of the chief symptoms of deception."[5]

The same writer pinpoints passivity-essentially a failure or refusal to actively exercise the will "in control over spirit, soul and body"-as a chief cause of demonic inroads upon an individual. Such passivity may even be a counterfeit, though not recognized as such, of surrender to God. "As the passivity has come about gradually, it can only end gradually as it is detected and destroyed. The full cooperation of the man is necessary for its removal, and this is the cause of the long period needed for his deliverance."[6]

How wisely it is said that, "The ground given which caused any faculty to fall into bondage to the enemy, must be found out and given up; and then refused persistently, in a steady resistance to the spirits of evil in their hold of it, remembering that the powers of darkness fight against the loss of any part of their kingdom in man, as much as any earthly government would fight to protect its own territory."[7]

To avoid regression after deliverance, the individual must commit himself completely to the Lord Jesus, studying the Word of God and praying, seeking regular fellowship with a group of believers, preferably in a local church under the

direction of a God-called pastor and men who meet the Scriptural qualifications for elders (I Timothy 3:1-7). Nothing less than this will meet the need. A church that is not strong or knowledgeable enough to set a person free from demonic powers is seldom strong enough to nurture and "grow him up" in the Lord after he has received his deliverance. A knowledge of the truth is the primary safeguard for the believer, and a vibrant and spiritually alive local church that grounds its teaching solidly in the Word of God will help supply that continually.

If a church has no real earmarks of the New Testament pattern, except for its loud proclamation of adherence to form, ceremony, traditions, creeds, and man-made and man-promoted programs and activities, it cannot supply the strong undergirding a believer needs. Sadly, there are some places that, like Sardis, have a name or reputation of being alive, but actually are dead as far as God is concerned (Revelation 3:1). Are the methods of a particular church like those of the New Testament? Are the gifts of the Holy Spirit in evidence and exercised according to Scriptural order? Do you see the overflowing love (agape) feasts of the believers, the praise and thanksgiving, and the other signs of a church that is vital, alive and glowing with life? There needs to be some genuine mark of the New Testament church if you are going to invest your time and money in it. Why should a delivered one go back into the rut of conventionality, tradition and a form of godliness which denies the power thereof?

Several times I have witnessed persons who were gloriously delivered, who left rejoicing and eager to share the good news in the churches in which they had been members. It makes little difference whether it is a legalistic, fundamental church, or a liberal and ritualistic church, the result is rarely good. Their testimony was ignored or rebuffed. They

learned to their sorrow that their happiness was not shared by their friends. Sometimes there is anger and resentment because they received such help outside of the accepted channels. I have even known some who have had their faith undermined to such an extent that they have lost out, and it is indeed true that their last state is worse than the former. Someone will surely answer to the Lord for this.

One of the big problems in many churches, even those not frozen with liberalism and formalism, is that "evangelistic pushes" have packed the churches with persons pressured in without a genuine salvation experience. Let preachers who have substituted programs for the power of God, fall on their faces before the Lord, confessing their unbelief, their pride in things which God does not value, and just be willing to become what God wants them to be, no matter what. How I pray that God will remove the blinders from pastors concerning deliverance and stir them to help their people to move actively forward into this neglected area of God's liberating truth!

[1]From Expelling Demons by Derek Prince, copyright by Derek Prince Pub., Ft. Lauderdale, Fla. 33302. Used by permission. p. 6.

[2]From The Overflowing Life by Robert Frost, copyright 1971 by Logos International, Plainfield, N.J. 07060. Reprinted by permission. p. 104.

[3]Ibid., p. 105.

[4]From War on the Saints by Jesse Penn-Lewis, copyright 1973 by Thos. E. Lowe, 1500, 2 Penn Pl., N.Y., N.Y. 10001. Used by permission. p. 241.

[5]Ibid., p. 90.

[6]Ibid., p. 93.

[7]Ibid., p. 233.

Part 3

Testimonies

Woman, 34 Years Old

Friday night I was delivered from many evil spirits which came from the Roman Catholic Church. Pastor Worley had mentioned in his sermon that prayer to the saints was anti-Scriptural. I was shocked when something inside of me boiled up with hatred for what he was saying. I myself was in agreement with him, having been saved and having studied my Bible.

During the invitation, I went to the pastor for prayer, explaining what had happened. He quietly rebuked the spirit of Prayer to the Saints in the name of Jesus and commanded him to manifest. Immediately the demon flared back at him, snapping angrily, "Shut up, you fool. Don't you talk to me like that." This began a struggle which I could hear but could not do much about, except to pray in my mind to the Lord Jesus. He cursed Pastor Worley and loudly berated him for "messing everything up," peevishly shouting that until he came with his "stupid preaching of that Book" they had had little trouble holding these people. "The Catholics belong to us, Satan gave them to us! You have no right to interfere!" he shouted angrily.

He glared at the former Catholics who were assisting in my deliverance, and shrieked accusingly, "You traitors, traitors! You were reared Catholic, how dare you break free, you belong to Satan; you have no right to do this." Then he became incoherent in his fury and frustration.

Finally, he was so embattled he angrily stormed, "All right, all right, I'm going, I'm going. I can't stand this anymore.' With an awful "AAAAAhhhhh!" and a scream he left. Other demons popped up, just as angry and resistant to the Word of God. The next ones were the names of the saints to whom I had prayed and to whom I had been dedicated. Each was a demon spirit and had to be thrown out in Jesus' name.

I am so thankful to be delivered from this host of spirits who were designated as the Spirits of Babylon. A very powerful one was belief in the Pope as the head of the church. Others were called: Authority of the Priest; Confession; Holy Eucharist; Blessing of Throats with Candles; Holy Water; Novenas; Ashes (for Ash Wednesday); Friday Devotions (I had been taught that making seven consecutive Fridays would save you); Lent, Knees (crawling from the back of the church to kiss a relic from Rome blessed by the Pope); Rosary, The Mass; Benediction Services; Prayers to Mary; Way of the Cross, Lighting Candles (vigil lights) and many others.

I do praise God for those who helped in my deliverance, which stretched into three and one-half hours.

Man, 36 Years Old

I was born and raised a Roman Catholic, attending the Catholic grade and high schools. I grew up having doubts about the religious system I learned, in spite of repeated assurances that the Roman Catholic was the only true church. I now see that the main reason for my ignorance was that, in thirty-five years in the Catholic church, I had never studied my Bible which alone is able to make a man wise unto salvation (II Timothy 3:15).

I was a faithful Catholic, but lacked power in my life to stop committing the sins which controlled my life. I went to confession repeatedly and was absolved, only to go right back to the things I hated and feared. I knew this to be gross hypocrisy but didn't know what else to do.

Editors note: Although there is mention of the use of "Holy Water" to exorcise demons in some writings, the demons universally poke fun at this and say that so called "Holy Water" actually strengthens them.

I continued the endless cycle of repentance, confession and penance, vainly seeking help from the saints, in the mass and other religious exercises, all without success.

I had no peace at all and lived in a constant state of torment, frustration and condemnation. Great fear gripped me and I shuddered at the thought of dying "at the wrong time." I had no assurance of anything beyond the grave to give me comfort. The "Purgatory" I was told of did not seem very appealing when I remembered all my public and secret sins. I lived in horrible fear, constantly plagued by hopelessness and helplessness.

At the age of 18, I departed from my strict upbringing eagerly embracing the unbridled pleasures of sex. Lust in every form became a way of life for me as I became completely obsessed with sex. My life revolved around sexual episodes and there was nothing perverted or kinky that I didn't try or have tried on me. I was driven and enslaved by burning passions that remained unslaked no matter where I turned or how deeply I plunged into the mire. In all this, I can truly say that I was never satiated nor did I find any happiness in the life I led. It was misery and agony all the way and the further I went the more I felt the emptiness of my heart.

Thank God, the Lord Jesus saw my despair and had pity on me. When I did not know where to turn or what to do the blessed Holy Spirit led me to churches where the Word of God and the gospel of salvation by grace was preached. I was gloriously saved, Jesus came into my heart. O what a difference!

But Satan is the arch deceiver. As a babe in Christ, I sought everything that God had for me. While attending a certain Pentecostal Church I asked for the baptism in the Holy Spirit. Appearing to be "slain in the Spirit," I fell to the floor as something like electrical charges ran through my body. My

hands seemed to be twisted and nailed to the floor and numbness clamped my face and mouth, making it impossible to speak clearly. When I attempted to tell the people what was happening they excitedly told me I was speaking in tongues. I was not convinced that this was the case at all and felt uneasy about the whole experience.

Praise the Lord! He saw my perplexed seeking of His will and led me to Hegewisch Baptist Church. They soon helped me by casting out a host of indwelling spirits of the occult, resentments and all kinds of filthy enslaving habits, and they refused to pray for the Spirit's fullness until I had been cleansed.

When the demons left, I received a real Holy Spirit baptism. This time there was no paralysis, no fears, just a relaxed atmosphere as people explained that the Holy Spirit would never force Himself upon me; that I would use my breath and tongue by my own volition as the Holy Spirit gave me the words. I was simply to speak in prayer and praise to God. It was a peaceful happy time for me as the prayer language flowed out. I knew that I had indeed received that which God has promised to His own.

Married Woman, 24 Years Old

My deliverance was easily the most remarkable experience I have ever had. It seemed that I was watching from a distance, though I was right there. The feeling of cleanliness and freedom which followed deliverance was entirely wonderful. I first noticed that I no longer had a life-long dread and terror of spiders. Later I realized that two other strong fears I had had for years were also absent. If my children slept late, I thought they had died in their sleep. Silly? Yes, but how often I had suffered horribly over this and run in to wake them to assure myself that they were all right.

Now when they sleep late, I enjoy it. I also had a terrible fear of plugging in electric appliances. It sounds foolish I know, but it was real bondage to me. The Lord Jesus took them all away!

During my deliverance a spirit of lust was named, and I was shocked and embarrassed. After it left, however, the Lord reminded me that for two years I had been having lustful thought about a certain man. I had been puzzled and a bit disgusted by this because sex was never a big thing to me. Now I understand that the demon had been feeding these lascivious thoughts into my mind. Since my deliverance, my only thoughts for this man are for his salvation.

After our first son was born, I had two miscarriages. The first four months of my next pregnancy were sheer misery. Every time I felt even a little ill I was certain I was about to miscarry again. When they dealt with me in deliverance, a spirit of Miscarriage and Fear of Miscarriage were discerned and called out in the name of Jesus. We are expecting our third child now, and thank God I no longer have any fears of losing it!

Married Woman, 21 Years Old

I believe in miracles. My soul was set free from loneliness, heartache, suicidal tendencies and deep depression. I was released from a state of confusion so strong that I could not even talk about my problem without bursting into uncontrollable tears. Reared as a Roman Catholic, my church was not sufficient to meet my needs. Even a Christian psychiatrist I turned to was no help. He listened politely as I sobbed bitterly, unable to talk during most of my hour with him, and then added another $35.00 on my bill. I was so broken that I could scarcely speak at all, so I paid money just

to sit and weep my heart out. Nothing he told me helped in the slightest and I became more desperate and depressed.

Just one year after my marriage, a divorce was finalized. A bad marriage consists of many things. Ours was a mating of his love for drugs, liquor, sex, poor attitude and terrible temper with my own set of awful problems. I did not love him when I married him, just barely liked him. I wanted new clothes, a car, a house we could not afford, and, above all, a social standing with the "in" crowd. This I thought would surely bring happiness. This combination set us up for a divorce and made it inevitable. Our little girl was a burden to me. I thought I didn't love her-yet I somehow knew I should. I felt so guilty about this and the rotten way we were living that I almost went out of my mind.

After the divorce, my husband and I continued to see each other often. Things would go fine until talk of a reconciliation would begin. Then it was as if some force or power that did not want us together would step in and cause discord and fighting. One day my husband came to see me and he was all excited about some little church he had visited. I was quite unimpressed by his news, for I had visited churches of all kinds and found them basically the same, unable to meet my needs.

He was so persistent in wanting me to go with him that finally I reluctantly consented to visit. The church was really different, but I couldn't make up my mind what it was that made it so different. Soon after the service began, I got a splitting headache and began to feel terribly uneasy. I was relieved when it was finally over and I could bolt for the door.

Later, I reflected on what I had seen and heard there. The people there all looked so peaceful and happy. That had to be phony, some sort of a religious game. No one could have what they seemed to have. My curiosity caused me to decide

to accompany my husband there a second time. This time I observed and listened more closely. I was amazed! They really were as happy as they looked! At testimony time it seemed everybody wanted to tell what Jesus Christ was doing in their lives. I had heard testimonies in other places, but they concerned what God had done years and years before. These folk were talking about things which had happened that day and in the few days since the last service. It was fascinating. They seemed blissfully unaware of the time as the service stretched into five hours. Surprisingly enough I was not too conscious of the time passing either. Always before going to church was something to be gotten through as soon as possible so you could go and do something really important. These people seemed to look forward to coming to this little church to share and to learn from the Bible.

My husband and I began to attend regularly. I felt unsure about heaven and still felt no love for my husband or baby in spite of my having asked Christ into my heart to save me. I went for prayer and the workers began to pray for me. Spirits of loneliness, heartache, suicide, depression, hate, resentment and other horrible demons were cast out. I wept hard through the entire procedure and was shocked to hear them name the very problems that had been destroying my life for so many years. Many were private and I had never mentioned them to anyone. I had discussed nothing with the workers and they didn't know me personally, but they confidently demanded that the spirits leave in Jesus' name. Another thing I noted, the workers did not seem capable of being shocked or surprised by the rotten character of my demons. I felt bathed in understanding, love and a compassion I did not know existed before. Then I realized—it was coming to me through these people who themselves had been cleansed from many defiling things. It was this

love and kindness which characterized the whole church and made it so different, Christ's love reaching out to me!

When I headed home that night I felt like a different person! The love I suddenly felt in my heart for both my husband and my child was overwhelming, and still is, many months later. We were remarried about two months after our individual encounters with Christ. My husband was delivered from many, many legions of evil spirits, including those associated with the constant need for drugs, alcohol and nicotine.

I get so excited when I think about all that Jesus Christ has done in our lives-I could just burst. I'd like to stand on the housetop and shout praises to Jesus, telling the world that He lives and still works miracles as He did in the Bible.

Man, 21 Years Old

Satan pounds at and torments people until they are desperate for any escape and then offers them "relief" by a lowering of the God-placed hedges about our minds (Job 1:10; Ecclesiastes 10:8). He showed me the doors of fantasy, philosophy, music, psychology, marijuana, L.S.D., hypnosis, trances, mantras and later began to suggest to me suicide, insanity and murder. As I would open the doors he showed me, there would be a state of ecstatic relief such as I didn't think was possible in the normal escapes of the material world fame, money, sex, etc.

I considered myself quite spiritual for finding these avenues of satisfaction. Yet at times floods of anxiety, depression and loneliness would descend on me. My sexual life was becoming more and more perverse, my mind was losing its ability to calmly reason anything out. All of my decisions were based on doing what I liked or upon guidance through occult divination from the Tarot, the I Ching or astrology. All

of my conversation and writings had become rambling, disordered fragments; incoherent to any mind that was not operating within this same demonized realm.

I perceived life's objective to be complete absorption into this spiritual world in which I was dabbling, leaving the material world behind. When I was "high" on acid I was in the spiritual world and I sought to stay there. Music could also carry me into this other world and often I would receive instructions on how to journey deeper into the spirit realm through the songs of certain groups: The Moody Blues, The Incredible String Band, The Grateful Dead, The Beatles, The Band, Bob Dylan and others whom I believed to be the apostles of our age.

When tuned into the music, many times with drugs, but not always, I could decipher intelligible messages being spoken through their instruments, the notes of the music would seem to turn into words. To the unstoned world it just sounds like senseless, deafening noise, but if you are really turned on and tuned in it becomes a wave of communication perfectly usable for persuading the listening, yet unwary ear.

That there is evil in this music may be apparent to the ordinary believer, but there is much more to it than just the evil that lies on the surface, in the sound and in the lyrics. "Tuned in" musicians can exert a degree of control over an audience, not by the words which they sing, but by what I can only call the spirit message contained within the music. I have witnessed and experienced drug dealings and sexual relations being arranged, without words, using telepathy based on the music as a wave length of communication. Rock music is sensual and devilish to a degree which few people suspect. A clever satanic snare for the naive, its dangers are least understood by those who are ensnared by the powers of it.

You may have heard how kids get "stoned" and then go "grooving" on this music. It is as if anyone who is "tuned in" to the demonic network can "plug in" at will and get messages on this band or grid. People are sometimes persuaded to commit certain acts by this means, even when they are unaware of what is happening to them. The murderous guru Charles Manson once commented that he had received instructions through a Beatles song, "Helter Skelter." There is a deadly occult power in and behind this popular music. This explains its tremendous popularity and influence.

One day, standing on a street corner, I invited Jesus Christ to take control of my life. But for several weeks thereafter I refused to believe that God's Word was the Bible. I hung on to beliefs in reincarnation and universal salvation, and I had some more drug, occult and immoral experiences. Yet Jesus was revealing to me the darkness in which I was living. Not long afterward, Jesus filled me with the Holy Spirit and I prayed in tongues. As a result, His Word became clearer and clearer. A few days after this experience I decided to set aside all drugs. God led me to the Hegewisch Baptist Church and the ministry of deliverance. From this point on it was a struggle to stay in, or even get to, the services. The frequency of the meetings was a real necessity to me. By the time Wednesday night rolled around, I was really dragging from the weight of the demons inside me and their helpers on the outside. Flashbacks, bad dreams, doubts, religious heresies, fatigue and actual physical pain were some of the enemy's chief weapons against me.

God's Word and the genuine overflowing love of the believers in the church were the only things which sustained me. The Word showed me the reality of my own darkness and for the next few months demons left me at a fairly steady rate. Often on the way home from a service I would begin

coughing and gagging so much that I would have to pull to the side of the road until it was over. I have no way of knowing exactly how many demons left me, nor do I know all of their names. I do recall some of the strongest ones who bound me: Idolatry (very strong); False Peace; Fantasy; Defeatism; Second-Placedness; Hatred; Rebellion; Rejection; Fears (many kinds); as well as curses put on me by two individuals who had dominated me. There were also many drug, sex, occult and witchcraft spirits. Spirits identified with folk and rock music left me, many by individual or band names. One of the most vicious spirits I had was one called Mick Jagger (Rolling Stones) and I recall one of the spirits chanting as he left, "You can't get married, you can't get married." I truly praise Jesus for His power to reveal and defeat the spiritual forces which control this world.

Man, 19 Years Of Age

The winter of 1971 found me fighting a war without recognizing who or what the enemy was or knowing how to fight. I did not even know where to start. I was born again, but bound. I listened incessantly to rock music, which I loved. I was drawn to it by the beat and enjoyed the lyrics. Reaching desperately for something, I seemed to find a sort of temporary relief when I listened to the music.

I began working at a restaurant when I was fifteen. It was alive with drug pushers and girls who were easy pick-ups. I plunged deeper into rock music, aching all the while. The words of loneliness, despair and desperation brought depression and many darkened days, but I was blinded to the source of the problem. I had made a common mistake as I sought for something to hang onto. I reached for the world (of rock music) instead of the Lord. My pastor preached

salvation clearly and simply but did not lead me further. I needed far more.

At school, a fellow student told me of a visit she had made to a small church where she witnessed the lengthening of legs in Jesus' name. As a matter of fact her own leg had been lengthened nearly an inch. She had been saved and had also received something she called the baptism in the Holy Spirit which made her able to pray in a language she had never learned. All this sounded interesting and so I decided that I would go and see for myself what it was all about. I had certainly heard nothing of this sort mentioned in my home church.

As I walked through the door of the church, the pastor came up to me, looked straight into my eyes, smiled and said simply, "I love you." He then put his arms around me and gave me a big bear hug. (Later I noticed that people there did this instead of shaking hands in greeting.) I would have been shocked by this greeting; however, when the man touched me, something warm and wonderful seemed to flow from him to me, and for the first time in months the ache in my heart seemed to fade away. The services were wonderful. I had never heard such singing and the testimonies thrilled me. The message from the Word of God was straightforward and simple, verse by verse through a chapter. There was love all around, happiness and security in the Lord. That night I went forward and asked for the baptism in the Holy Spirit, and as the new language poured from my innermost being, I knew that I had finally found help.

I was never encouraged to leave my church services, only to visit when I wished with the church in Hegewisch. No one seemed concerned about church membership and numbers. They didn't even have an attendance board! They were concerned about people in their relationship to the Lord and were willing to counsel with and pray for any who asked it.

In the weeks that followed, the Lord dealt with me in a very gentle way, revealing what rock music had done to my mind, emotions, attitudes and outlook on life. I renounced rock music and many other unclean things in my life. A great weight lifted from me and my mind began to clear. Believers helped me renounce and then they cast out spirits of Loneliness, Despair, Suicide, Rhythm, Confusion, Rebellion, Disobedience, Insanity, Double mindedness, Immorality, Filthy Imaginations, Fornication, Masturbation, Lust, Filthy Dreams, Fear of Rejection, Fear of Being Loved, Hatred, Frustration, Indifference, and many, many others. Jesus delivered me from them all and how I do praise Him for this each day that I live. Hallelujah!

Young Man, 19 Years Of Age

Reared in a Baptist church, I had accepted Christ as Saviour at the age of six. My father was a deacon and my mother was active in all the ladies' work. I soon fell into the trap of religiousness, marking my spiritual growth by the length of my attendance-pin chain. While others wallowed in dens of iniquity I enjoyed the view from the rafters of righteousness! I grew theologically solid and spiritually dead, knowing the truth but failing to live it. I came to the conclusion that Christianity was fine for life after death but that I needed something else for here and now. I skimmed Zen, the Bhagavad-Gita, poetry and philosophy in a search for principles to guide my life. I never even considered searching the Scriptures. Raised in a fundamentalist church, I assumed I already knew it all.

I didn't! On April 13, 1972 God baptized me in His Holy Spirit! Praise the Lord! For the first time I experienced real joy, peace and a measure of victory in my Christian life. Yet there was still something wrong. I was still in bondage to

sexual compulsions, pride, anger and an urge to escape into fantasy.

In November, 1972 God set me free! I was in a men's prayer meeting, watching as a friend was being prayed for for deliverance. A spirit was named, Malicious Temper, that I suddenly realized fitted me precisely. I knelt by myself to pray, only to find another personality taking me over so completely as to render me incapable of independent action. Men quickly surrounded me and, before the night was over, I was delivered of demon spirits that had controlled me for over fourteen years! Demons of Sorcery, Homosexuality, Pride and Murder and others named themselves and left, leaving me free. Hallelujah! Glory to Jesus, praise His name!

Woman, 55 Years Old

After being ill for most of the past fourteen years, and having many serious operations, I regained partial health and returned to work early in the year. However, about the middle of July I became very ill again and in the fall I had to resign my position. I grew steadily worse and was so ill that I could scarcely leave the bed at all.

On the 21st of October I persuaded my husband to take me to a service at the Hegewisch Baptist Church. When I went for prayer during the invitation, God performed miracles and my body was completely healed. Spirits of infirmity were cast out of me which had bound me for so many years. I was amazed as I listened to the believers who gathered around me to pray. They knew nothing but my name, but the Holy Spirit gave them discernment to call out the major afflicting spirits that I had had for years. I felt the spirits leave my body and what a relief!

For many years I had to eat every two-and-a-half to three hours because of a long standing and verified case of

hypoglycemia. After my healing at the church, the Lord directed me on a fast of thanksgiving to God for three days. Formerly this would have meant migraine headaches and unbearable nausea and other serious side effects. This time it was nothing but a glorious time of fellowship with the Lord and rejoicing.

Because of my ailments, for over six years I was on a very strict diet of fish, green beans, carrots, potatoes, canned peaches, applesauce, water and Sanka coffee. I also had to take many pills and shots to nourish my body and force the glands to function. How wonderful that now I eat whatever I like and suffer no ill effects! My doctor of 15 years shook his head in amazement as he went over the second set of tests he had run on me when he could find not one trace of my former chronic ailments and deficiencies. My body is rapidly returning to the healthy state it was in before I was badly injured by a horse at the age of 11. Thank God for deliverance and health!

Woman, 25 Years Old

Raised in a Baptist home, I received Christ as my Saviour when I was seven. I am the third of five children, with one older sister. My father was openly partial to her and at a very early age I felt the bitter sting of being rejected, unwanted and unloved. As a teenager, I turned to my friends seeking acceptance and love, only to again be rejected. I became obsessed with proving to myself and the world that I was nothing short of the most intelligent, witty and desirable creature that ever walked the earth.

I was sly and cunning and would stop at nothing to obtain what I wanted. I rebelled against my parents and the church and went on my merry way, hurting and destroying anyone or anything that hindered me. My parents could not control

me no matter what they did. I smoked, drank, stayed out all night and had sex with just about anyone I dated. All the while my hatred grew and grew and there was no happiness in my life at all. At the age of nineteen I had a nervous breakdown. I remember kneeling beside my bed and asking God what I had done to deserve this-really doubting that He existed at all.

One day during a second relapse, I went to my parent's minister for help. I knew I was saved, but I couldn't control my compulsions for cigarettes, alcohol, swearing, lying and sex. I was totally despondent, tortured constantly with the guilt and condemnation that accompanied my actions.

The minister's opening remark was, "Well, the first thing you have to do is get that stuff off your face. You look like a painted street walker!!" That wasn't what I needed to hear. Then and there I knew God and I were through; I'd live my life to the fullest and worry about eternity when the problem presented itself. As time passed a tremendous fear built up within me. Fear of dying, fear of sickness, fear of being rejected, fear of anything and everything. At work I nearly fainted with fear if I got an unexplicable pain.

I drove myself at a frenzied pace, rarely sleeping and constantly dieting to maintain my figure. I became more hateful, critical of others, irresponsible and apathetic. I dated merely to turn the guy off and on, playing with his mind and feelings. Once I was certain that he cared for me or I had gotten him to tell me he loved me, the game was over; I had won again and I dropped him.

I quit my job when I got what I thought to be the most thrilling opportunity of my life. I was hired as a cocktail Bunny at the Chicago Playboy Club! I knew I would never be rejected again. I had the world on a string, I was going to be a Playboy Bunny. Then Satan moved in and my temporary happiness was gone. I was pregnant and the father didn't

want to marry me. After he agreed to marry me I tried to avoid the marriage and eliminate my child, all without success. I married someone I didn't love and bore a child I didn't want.

The marriage was a disaster mentally, physically and financially. There were constant fights that often turned into brutal brawls. There was resentment, hatred, adultery and a daily life that was impossible to bear. I left my husband and daughter twice for short periods of time, returning home because I had nowhere to go. By now not even my parents wanted me. I drank, smoked pot occasionally and turned to other men for a release from the horrid, dull life I had made for myself. Everywhere I turned the walls were closing in on me. I felt I couldn't breathe.

My daughter was now three, old enough to see the hatred between her father and mother. One night I realized I did need God after all. My husband and I began to fight about 3:00 in the morning. As always we started to hit each other until it became so violent that we found ourselves lying on the sidewalk in front of the house with his hands around my throat. In the background I heard crying and, looking up, saw my little girl in the doorway. Her arms waved violently as she screamed, "No, Mommy, no, no, no!"

That was more than I could stand, something had to change before I lost my mind completely. For some time my sister had been asking me to go to this church she had found. That was the last thing in the world I was interested in, but I knew I had to go. One Wednesday I went. Love and the power of the Holy Spirit were there that night. I received the baptism of the Holy Spirit and for the first time I could remember, I was absolutely, undeniably happy.

Soon my husband began to attend and received Christ as Saviour and the baptism in the Holy Spirit. Even so, there was still tension and hatred between us. As we continued to

attend services we heard messages on demons and demonic bondage. The Holy Spirit began to reveal where our sorrow and unhappiness had come from. I made up my mind to seek deliverance from the things that had enslaved me so long.

Two nights before my deliverance, we got into a fight that turned out to be the most vicious we had ever had. At the end my husband threw me against the door and as I fell to the ground I said to myself, "You fool, you stupid fool, why did you ever think it would change?" I got up, walked to the bathroom and slit my wrists. When my husband saw what I had done, he rushed me to the hospital where I was stitched up. Satan was waging war and I was the battlefield. I knew God could free me from this bondage and determined to ask for prayer. The following Sunday we went forward for prayer. When the deliverance session was over, I had been freed from spirits of Hatred for men, Lust, Perversion, Rejection, Fear, Murder, Suicide and Resentment for my daughter. I was exhausted, but felt much better and calmer. Within the next few months I returned for prayer and spirits of Hatred for my sister and my father, Jealousy, Envy, Hypochondria, Masochism, Drugs and Alcohol left.

There is today a new love in my life-one of which I am not ashamed. I'm in love with the Lord Jesus Christ. I praise His holy name for the wonderful Spirit-filled Christian husband He has given me and the pure and deep love He has given us for each other. What a miracle, that out of the ashes of lust, selfishness and depravity, God could create a genuine love and respect between two people who started off so badly!

He Gave

If time were such that Thou couldst keep me everlastingly,
And touch my mind and mend my heart, release the love in me.

For in the dark of night there fell my tears of long despair, To search and seek but ne'er to find a one I knew didst care. But as the sun that softly breaks above the tallest tree You came, abode, then, knew and touched this torment deep
in me.
This empty shell, turned cold as stone, soon blossomed gold and blue,
And now I know, like fields of green, t'was you, dear Lord,
T'was You!

Man, 35 Years Old

I am a traveling salesman and for many years my life was in a particular rut. I was driven by a strange compulsion which I could neither understand nor control. Although happily married and the father of children, I would wander the streets and into bars to wait hungrily for some woman to make improper advances toward me.

When I met Jesus Christ and invited him into my life, there were wonderful changes in every area of my life save one. My lustful, wandering eyes still boldly accosted every woman I met and filthy thoughts and fantasies would fill my mind. In a turmoil of guilt and condemnation, I prayed, seeking the Lord's help. But the old bondage continued and even seemed to grow stronger. Over and over I would find myself in a strange city and be driven out to walk the streets and cruise the bars. Sometimes I would come to myself and could not even remember leaving the room where I was spending the night. It was terribly unsettling and disturbing. I knew that something was wrong with me, but to whom could I turn for counsel, who would understand such a compulsion? Over and over it happened until I felt that I must have mental problems to be so depraved and out of control.

Someone told me about the Hegewisch Church and I went, hoping that there I might find some help. On my second visit there I was deeply convicted about my smoking habit and went for prayer. I was very quietly delivered of the cigarette, nicotine and addiction spirits and I thought that the lustful spirit had also left when the workers prayed against it.

When it was once more time to make another business trip out of town, I was confident, bubbling over with assurance that this one would indeed be different. Imagine my horror that night when I found myself walking along the street again, and could not even remember leaving my room. Again, like a machine, my head and eyes were lustfully examining each female I passed. I could not stop! My heart sank within me and I felt deep despair. I tried to fight the unclean spirit but without success. When I finally got back to my room, numbed by the experience of being overwhelmed, I followed the advice I had been given at the church and plunged into the book of Proverbs. Nothing seemed to staunch the shame, condemnation and hopelessness I felt.

I knew with all my heart I wanted to obey and follow God, and to have a clean mind and body, but the unclean thing within me had mastered me and broken my capacity to resist. I seemed helpless in its grip. Thoroughly shaken, I went a third time to Hegewisch, fully intending to go forward for prayer at the close of the service. However, the time came and I held back, unable to bring myself to go forward. As the pastor paused to speak to me I blurted out that I still needed prayer. He laid hands on me and began to pray.

I had seen Satan manifest in others but I was quite unprepared for what came next. My body trembled and quaked from head to foot as the demon was terrorized by the name and authority of the Lord Jesus. He hated the pastor

and loudly threatened to kill him and to run from the place. When men moved quickly to restrain him, he went berserk, shrieking, cursing, threatening, bellowing, and fighting to free himself. Twenty-one years he had ruled and reigned in me! He stubbornly insisted that this was his house and under no circumstances would he leave. God revealed to me the exact time that this ruler spirit had entered into me. When I was counselled to confess to the Lord, claiming I John 1:9, I did so, and the ruler left with an ear-splitting and sustained scream of despair. The battle had run over two hours, and countless spirits had been forced to leave as the workers battled with the ruler prince. O what peace when he left me at last. Thank God for the blood of Jesus!

Woman, 20 Years Old

It was Sunday morning when I went forward for prayer. Soon after the pastor began to pray, a demon named Fear of Death manifested himself. After much crying, screaming and begging for mercy, in the name of Jesus he was cast out. One after another demon spirits manifested, some identifying themselves, others refusing to speak their names, hoping this would keep them from being evicted.

Sunday night, as I went up toward the front to pray, another demon manifested. I felt as if my legs and arms were being guided by some evil force and I seemed helpless to stop myself. The demon flew at my pastor with my body and began hitting him with clenched fists. Over and over he kept screaming, "I told you I'd be back." A number of evil spirits named themselves, and were cast out.

There was specific bondage. Before accepting the Lord Jesus Christ into my heart as my personal Saviour, I was a "good" Roman Catholic. I went to church, confession, made my confirmation and received communion regularly.

Without my realizing it, Satan had me bound in a trap from which I could not escape.

While in high school, I lost interest in going to church, so for a couple of years I stopped attending. I flew to Arizona to school and in my loneliness I started to pray again. My childhood prayers came back and I began praying to the Virgin Mary. It got so bad that I would be forced to recite the rosary at least five times before I could fall asleep. Even then, my sleep was fitful and troubled.

I would wake up in the middle of the night and sense something dark and dreadful in the room with me. This presence filled me with dread and fears. It was during this time that my mother wrote to say that she had been saved and that her arthritis had been miraculously healed in answer to prayer. Her letter sounded so strange. In my desperation, I knelt down and cried out, "Lord, I don't know what my mother has, but whatever it is I want it too. I want you to come into my heart in a real way." Immediately a wonderful peace came and an assurance that Jesus was real which I had never had before.

In spite of this, I would be so tormented at times that I called Mom to pray for me. Pressures would then ease, but at night the devil would again attack, forcing me to frantically blurt out Hail-Mary's before I could sink into a restless sleep, filled with nightmares.

After I came home, I received the baptism in the Holy Spirit and we heard about the Hegewisch Baptist Church. When I went there, I was shown the dangerous bondage in which I had been living. I renounced all occult connections and contacts, forgave persons who had hurt or disappointed me and renounced everything Catholic I could think of. That night I had my first real restful sleep in months.

My deliverance involved several sessions. As Pastor Worley prayed, a very vile and violent spirit manifested. He yelled

over and over, "She's mine, she's mine. She was given to me. You leave her alone!" Kicking and screaming, he shouted that Satan had bound me and would not let me go under any circumstances. A number of times he spit in the faces of the workers, but they only laughed and praised the Lord. This goaded him to an even greater fury and he rained blows and scratches on them anytime he could wrench an arm or leg loose. He also tried hard to bite those assisting at the deliverance.

After his name had been discerned, the spirits began to lift me from the floor and slam me down. They also tried to pound my head against the floor. Except for the workers' intervention I could have been hurt.

This behavior subsided finally. The pastor continued to press the demons determinedly. Reluctantly, sullenly the demons admitted they were defeated and had to leave and loudly cried their names as they left me. The first to leave (and one of the most vicious) was Mariolatry. (I had been dedicated to the Virgin Mary.) After him came other religious spirits including: Holy Eucharist and Worshiping and Praying To Idols.

Two weeks later a demon of Confessional and Guilt of Lying in the Confessional Box were cast out. After I renounced the practice of praying to the saints, spirits bearing the names of the various “saints" to whom I had prayed were forced to come out in Jesus' name. Next the spirit of Rosary was rebuked. In my ignorance, the devil had been tormenting me to recite the rosary every night-and I had done it! Rosary was very angry at being uncovered and shouted profanity and curses before he came out.

The following Wednesday I was sitting with my aunt in church, praying, when demons manifested again. Without warning, I abruptly turned to my aunt and began to strike her with my fists and scream curses at her. Workers carried

me to the front and another deliverance began. Fear of Men and Hatred of Men manifested, but they insisted that they could not leave. A more powerful demon was holding them in place. When he was forced to manifest, he arrogantly ordered the believers to cease praying immediately! Filled with hatred for male authority, his name was Women's Lib. My head began to spin and I felt faint. My body was burning from head to toe, from the inside out, and I cried out in pain. The workers rebuked the pain unsuccessfully and it grew worse. The spirit laughed and called them names like male chauvinist and fascist pig, all the while increasing the pressure on me until I thought I would die of the awful pain.

A word of wisdom came to the pastor who told me that he loved me and would stand in place of my own father and take the authority of the father over the demon. When he did this, immediately Women's Lib retreated to the pit of my stomach and the pain instantly ceased. Knowing the danger, the ruler then proceeded to send up smaller, protesting demons in an all-out attempt to hold his own position and deflect the attacks from himself. Suicide was followed by Rejection, No Love, Fear of Being Loved, Lying, Stubbornness, Confusion, Filthiness, Murder, Heresy, Incest, Temper Tantrums, and Leukemia. Last of all came Women's Lib, struggling to remain and threatening everyone present with doom as he left with an awful scream.

On Friday night a curse of Immorality was broken and within the next hour all the spirits which had come in under the curse left. Following this deliverance, a huge weight lifted from me and as the joy of the Lord flooded me, I could not resist running and leaping and praising the Lord. I was actually set free!

Man, 27 Years Old

I was reared a Roman Catholic and remained a member for twenty-two years. My home was filled with constant fighting as a child. When old enough, I went into the service and then to Vietnam. After my return, I met a Baptist girl and within two months she was pregnant (p. 223). The relationship was purely sexual and we did not want to marry. I even went so far as to take her for an abortion. It was too late so, in her sixth month of pregnancy we were married.

Without the Lord, we had nothing but problems for three and a half years of marriage. Sexual, financial, parental and extra-marital difficulties plagued us, just to mention a few. Then, after turning everywhere trying to solve my problems, I realized that Jesus was the answer. After years of pain and sorrow I found happiness, peace and joy through my Saviour. In the Spirit-filled church we visited, I witnessed the most wonderful outpouring of love, tenderness and concern I had ever seen anywhere. At first it was too much to believe, but the love of Christians won me to the Lord.

The presence of demonic spirits and deliverance was not easy for me to accept. When I at last came to the realization that demonic spirits were living within me, I sought help. My first session came at a birthday party at my wife's aunt's to which the pastor had been invited. After we had a brief conversation, he began to pray, coming against the demons of Lust, Sexual Perversion and Masturbation. Instantly I was flooded with rage and my whole body began to shake violently. Realizing that he had run into a nest of very strong spirits, the pastor ceased the attack and got another man to help him. As they resumed prayer, rebuking the spirits again, there was kicking, screaming and swearing. It was all both men could do to hold me down on the bed. It was a weird sensation, like witnessing yourself in some bad dream,

but unable to do anything about it. My whole body and particularly my lower abdomen seemed to be twisting and turning and strange pains darted through that whole area. It took over an hour to extract the spirits and I was completely exhausted, soaked with sweat and aching all over. This soon passed however as the men prayed again and only the weariness remained. I had lightness and peace I had longed for. A great burden had been lifted.

Two weeks later, at the church, I received more prayer. Demons of Adultery, Profanity and Hatred for Mother came out. I was amazed, for I had not realized that I hated my mother, the problem was so buried under guilt. This time it took ten men to hold me fast and the demons almost broke free several times in spite of their efforts. A third session six weeks later removed Hatred for my wife.

The Lord gave me a love for my wife I did not think was possible. My life took a complete about face. It was nearly two months before the next deliverance session. At this time, spirits of Pride, Fear of Rejection and Rebellion were forced to leave.

Shortly after that, my hardest deliverance took place. This time only one came out, a huge spirit of Lying. He had entered me at the age of four, coming from my mother who was a compulsive liar. He fought for over two hours before he finally left. I was exhausted but happy to be free.

Only recently I was delivered from an abnormal desire for sex. I wanted sex with my wife every day, even though it was not satisfying, just compulsive. Thank the Lord for sweet deliverance and for a normal and satisfying relationship with my wife. I now treasure and love my wife more than I ever thought possible.

Woman, 30 Years Of Age

I was reared in a Christian home filled with do's and don't's and fear of the wrath of a stern and implacable God. He looked for little girls like me to step out of line so He could fall upon them or something they loved with a lightening bolt. The Bible was an exciting book of fairy tales which took place some other time, some other place-somehow. It was beautiful to listen and to imagine all these great miracles really happening, but at the close of each story, I would jolt myself back to face the reality of the fears, disappointments, and continuous defeat in my life.

I would pray to God to save someone or to help me stop sinning in a particular area. Afterward, I would go back and be caught in the same trap again. Satan would then bring accusations. In despair, I decided that I couldn't even be a good sinner!

When I first attended the Hegewisch Baptist Church, I remember hurrying out at the close of the service, fearful that someone might attempt to embrace me. They were so demonstrative there! However, by the time I came for my third visit I was really sold on what was happening in the place. It was strange, but enjoyable. Sermons were verse by verse from the Bible, interesting and always seemingly pointed at me.

I decided to go forward during the invitation to check if this gift of discernment the preacher allegedly had was really on the up and up. I supposed that if this was in operation, the pastor would be able to know all my problems and to state specifically what sins I had committed. I certainly was not going to be tricked into coughing or screaming or becoming emotional. Above all, I was determined to maintain my dignity.

When he asked me to lay my hands in his upturned palms, the touch produced an immediate and peculiar reaction in me, which I assured myself was due to my nervousness. He looked directly into my eyes and asked me if I had ever used profanity. I was embarassed but decided that lying would only complicate things. Besides, he looked so sure of what he asked, he would have known. I nodded my head and he took authority over the spirit of Profanity and commanded it to come out in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. Something which felt like pockets of gas began racing up, down and around in circles inside my stomach and finally shot up through my esophagus and out of my mouth with a rush. I was shocked, but felt a great sense of relief and all became quiet.

Later, after conferring with my skeptical parents, who brushed aside the whole concept of demons as emotionalism and immaturity, I dismissed the manifestations as something natural resulting from my nervousness. However, these answers and rationalizations which seemed so pat and certain in the face of my parent's unbelief did not bring me peace of mind.

I had an area of special personal torment and so I returned to the church. When I walked forward, I mentioned the area to the pastor. Again he took authority quietly in Jesus' name and commanded it to manifest and leave me. My whole body shuddered and my head began shaking and jerking back and forth, and I heard a strange voice coming from deep within me shrieking, "No! No!" I was filled with a nameless fear of the man praying for me, and yet at the same time, a part of me, deep inside, was calm and at peace. A strange feeling. When the preacher continued to harass the demon with Scripture and commands to leave, the spirit loudly shouted protests and refusals. After a period of struggle however, suddenly my head jerked back and a horrible screeching

scream came from my mouth. Again all was quiet inside, and though I felt peculiarly exhausted and drained, I was relieved and happy.

As I was driving home, rejoicing because of what had happened, a chilling fear took hold of me. I seemed to hear a voice saying that I was going to be destroyed. I felt the protecting presence of the Holy Spirit and remembered how at the church they had counselled me not to be afraid but to claim the victory won by Jesus on the cross and through the resurrection. As I did this, I was filled with a radiant happiness and security.

Some weeks later I went forward again, and this time all hell broke loose. It all started with a spirit called Idolatry of the Beatles and, within the next half hour, forty-six demons had named themselves and left with various manifestations. The ugliest and most violent were the ones connected with the Beatles. It is hard to imagine how something so ugly could come from music which I had once thought was so beautiful. One demon did a sort of yodeling bit, two octaves above my normal voice range. It was weird, but how good to be free from such domination.

At another prayer session, a latent Lesbian spirit manifested who completely changed my voice to that of a man. Matriarchial Supremacy and Dominance shouted angrily, trying to still the workers who sang "Power in the Blood." Having been in my family for generations, he was deeply rooted and very strong. I was beginning to feel as Lazarus must have felt when his loved ones unwrapped him. There were over 50 spirits who gave their names before they left. One headed a family of 40 accusing spirits and stated that their job was to accuse me of failure in whatever I attempted to do, keeping me in a constant state of frustration. There was also a spirit of False Love who delicately announced "I am beauty, I am sweetness, everybody likes me!" Praise the

Lord for deliverance. My life is not the same and how thankful I am to the Lord for that!

Man, 77, Retired Pastor

During the World War I, there was an epidemic called the Spanish Influenza, and I was one of the victims. It left me with a severe case of chronic bronchial asthma. If there ever was an afflicting demon, this is one of the chiefs. I suffered for many years with no real or lasting relief.

Many were the occasions when I cried unto the Lord, "O, wretched man that I am, who will deliver me from this body of death?" The 25th verse said that Jesus would, and I searched for years for a way in which to apply this verse to myself in order to obtain freedom and release from the curse of these afflicting spirits. (However, at that time, I never suspected spirits being the cause, for I was thoroughly convinced that no Christian could ever have a demon.)

God heard my urgent appeals and sent Pastor Worley to Houston from Chicago to minister. He bought a message of hope and deliverance from demonic bondage. Attending this meeting convinced me that I indeed needed deliverance and that I had approached the problem from the wrong angle, and thus had received no help. Something he said kept revolving in my mind, goading me to action: "If you have a splinter in your hand, you would not let it remain there to fester, you would want to do something about it." I decided to do something about mine.

On three consecutive nights my wife and I stood in line for three hours waiting to get our turn for prayer. Pastor Worley, his wife and the workers he brought from Chicago, prayed continually with people, casting out many hundreds of evil spirits. Others in the church, some newly delivered, were also helping, but there were still not enough workers.

Between midnight and 1:00 a.m. the weary workers would begin to bind up the remaining spirits and sadly turn away those who had not yet had the opportunity for prayer.

After witnessing many manifestations and hearing the cries of the tormented demons as they left, I wanted more than ever to be delivered. The shining faces and the relief experienced by those who were being delivered were so encouraging.

Two nights we waited in line and never got to the altar for prayer. It was reminiscent of the Pool of Bethesda, others scrambled into the water ahead of us. On the third night we sat very near the front and immediately went forward when the invitation was given, even then a number were there ahead of us.

I watched with fascination as the person just ahead of us was delivered. The shrieks and cursing of the demon against the minister was something to behold. I could hear the pastor's gentle but firm voice over the hysterical outburst of fury, calmly and deliberately demanding the demon's expulsion, quoting Scripture and commanding in the name of Jesus Christ. Finally with a terrible convulsion and scream, the demon gave up the battle and fled. The peace of God then came over the delivered one and praise for the Lord Jesus and tears of joy intermingled. Although I had witnessed this scene over and over in the meeting, it still filled me with wonder and awe.

At last we were at the altar. As we knelt, Pastor Worley asked what we needed, and we told him of harassing physical problems which had made life miserable for both of us for over fifty years. He prayed for leadership and guidance as to the best way to proceed. At first I thought I would just kneel quietly beside my wife and observe what happened to her, but after a few spasms of racking coughs, she was quiet and peaceful.

I wondered if I would kick, shriek and moan like others I had witnessed. I tried to pray but the words seemed to be like pieces of lead on my tongue. I was then instructed not to pray with my mouth, but only in my mind. This to remove any obstacle to spirits who might be forced to leave through the breathing passages. I was asked to take two or three deep breaths through my mouth.

As I followed his directions strange things began to happen. I was seized with an uncontrollable paroxym of coughing, and I had the queerest feeling that I was not doing this, but something inside was reacting. I had never, in all my attacks of coughing and gasping for air, coughed as deeply as I did that night. It went on for some time and I couldn't seem to quit.

As I gulped in the fresh air, it was as if my lung capacity had at least doubled. How delicious and exhilarating to take great long deep breaths and with no pain or tightness. Unbelievable, but true! I felt very empty and cleansed and peace came flooding over me. As the pastor prayed for the filling and healing of the places where the demons had done damage in body, mind and spirit, my peace and happiness deepened. I left the building that night feeling freer than I had ever felt in my life.

As I write this several months after the event, both my wife and I have remained free of the former binding physical and spiritual bondages and handicaps. I have no trace now of the bronchial asthma and she no longer has chronic insomnia, and nervousness. The almost crippling arthritis she had for years is gone, completely healed. For those who have never known the nagging misery of being constantly worn down by physical pain and suffering, it may seem incredible. And it is, but praise the Lord Jesus, it is real. All I can say is thank God for deliverance!

Woman, 36 Years Of Age

I was a Roman Catholic from birth. Because I was baptized, believed in the Trinity, believed in Jesus dying for our sins, the resurrection, participated in the sacraments, etc., I believed I was saved. However I knew something was missing in spite of my constant striving. When a born-again woman asked me if I was saved and knew I was going to heaven when I died, I could not honestly answer "yes." She urged me to read my Bible, especially John, chapter 3. I owned a Bible, but had never read it. After reading John 3:3, I was more certain than ever that I had missed something. Shortly afterwards, I attended a gospel meeting where I received the Lord Jesus Christ as my personal Saviour. Later I was baptized in the Holy Spirit.

At a Full Gospel Businessmen's meeting where Pastor Worley spoke I experienced something which seemed unreal. In the counselling room after the meeting I witnessed the casting out of evil spirits. If I had not seen it with my own eyes I would never have believed it.

It was four months later when a spirit in me first manifested. It happened at a prayer meeting in my sister's home. A prophecy was given concerning the tribulation which was to come. A demon in me stirred and I became violently sick. When they laid hands on me to pray against the illness, an odd voice came from me, screaming and yelling and telling them to shut up. He claimed he had been there since my birth, although I was unaware of his existence. His name was 666, but no one knew this.

The evil spirit scratched, cursed, kicked, bit and struggled for over four hours. He kept saying he would never leave because he had had the right of ownership since birth. The believers prayed for discernment from the Holy Spirit. One of them announced, "It is something connected with her

name." As soon as she repeated two of my names, Judith Esther, the demon literally went wild. My sister knew that, as a Catholic, I had a confirmation name also, however, no one could remember it. I kept trying to speak the name for them but the evil spirit was too strong and blocked me. He kept threatening, telling me that he would kill my children if I told.

However, we are more than conquerors through Jesus Christ! After I tried unsuccessfully to speak for five minutes, choking and gagging, I finally managed to stammer out the missing name, Dianne. The workers dealing with me took authority and commanded in Jesus' name that the spirit of 666 (Judith [6] Esther [6] Dianne [6]) leave. The key to the hold the demon had on me, was my three names, each of which contained 6 letters.

He fought on bitterly but was obviously weakened by the disclosure of his name. He blustered and threatened that he would return, that we would be sorry, etc. What a blessed relief when he finally gave up and fled with ear-splitting screams. Thank God for deliverance!

Man, 25 Years Old

During my early teens, I despaired of God and began to justify sin in my life. I saw no remedy for me in the Roman Catholic faith in which I had been reared and began to rationalize my lusts and wrong attitudes by comparison with literary and artistic heroes which I studied in parochial schools.

After high school it was inevitable that I would want to "live out" what I had been thinking was the answer to mankind's search for "love and peace." The philosophy of the "flower children" dovetailed nicely with the attitudes of the Byrons and Van Goghs of history. I moved from home and began

what I foolishly believed to be a noble and worthy way of life, free from outmoded traditions.

As I pursued my career as an artist, I found myself involved more and more in the sinful lifestyle of the counterculture. Communal living, drugs, rock music, sex and pleasure were the main things in life for me. All the while I sincerely believed in and was devoted to this way of life and sank deeper into degradation. I drifted into a serious study of the music, religions and cultures of the East. Soon I began to develop symptoms of severe neurosis. Insecurity, fears, withdrawal from others and dark depressions were my constant companions. Far from finding an answer, I had ended up with no purpose in my life.

I did not turn to the Bible because I had been led to equate the story of Jesus with Greek and Roman mythology. When my spirit cried out to God, my mind would quickly upbraid me for my "superstitious" upbringings and residual attitudes. I plunged harder into sensual gratification, trying vainly to fill the void. I ended up numb, scarcely able to feel at all. My learned books explained reality from every point of view, except that of the Bible.

After five years of striving, the futility of it all and the uselessness of existence drove me to the breaking point. Friendships had proven unsure and selfish, art was little more than seemingly meaningful nonsense, music was depressing and crushing in its mocking cynicism. None of the so-called remedies worked. I was enslaved by my own lusts and desires, and yet found no gratification or fulfillment in giving in to them. In despair I turned from dreams of finding utopia in this "free" lifestyle, totally disillusioned. Now I was battling to keep my sanity.

I took a job on a Great Lakes freighter but after four months the pressures I was under forced me to leave the ship. I decided to bicycle across Wisconsin, still desperate for some

answer for the misery of life. I stopped at a fairgrounds where I met a young couple. He began to witness to me about Jesus Christ and my need to be saved from my sins by receiving Him. He spent a good bit of time showing me what the Bible said. The next day I found a church and asked for a Bible. When the pastor gave me a copy he went over the plan of salvation with me and I was amazed that he said the same things the young man had the day before. I began to read the New Testament.

Riding through Waukesha I saw a storefront with a sign, The Answer. Inside, the walls were covered with Bible verses and a large group of young people were gathered, studying the Bible. I walked in and sat down to listen to the class. At the close several fellows introduced themselves and asked if I needed any help. Before I could think, I blurted out, “I want to believe in Jesus, but I just can't do it.” They took me to the prayer room and reviewed the plan of salvation. I had a real desire to confess Christ, but my tongue would not move. One of the brothers said that if I would believe the Lord for it, he would command the demon holding my tongue to release me. I whispered, "Lord, I believe," and the binding spirit was ordered to come out in Jesus' name. A great release followed as though a heavy weight had been lifted from me. I asked the Lord Jesus to come into my heart and forgive my sins. I knew I had found what I had sought—I was saved, born again! Next, I was baptized in the Holy Spirit.

I continued there many days, studying the Bible, learning to witness and working to support myself. Later when I moved back to Chicago I attended the Bill Gothard seminar where I was deeply convicted of rebellion against my parents. I called home to ask forgiveness and for permission to move back home and live there under authority as an obedient son. They joyfully and freely forgave me.

After coming home, I began to attend the Hegewisch Baptist Church and deliverance on a large scale started for me. I had picked up an unbelievable horde of demonic spirits in my vain search for reality and peace. I have experienced so many hours of deliverance that I long ago lost count. For well over two years demons have poured out of me periodically.

Was it worth all the effort? Yes! Yes! a thousand times yes! Each time I am delivered I can tell a marked difference in my everyday life. My mind is clearer, my physical problems are lessened, and my spiritual growth accelerates following each session of deliverance. Thank God for His power to heal broken lives!

Part 4

Appendix

The Covenant of Blood

Through the blood of Jesus, I am redeemed out of the hand of the devil. Through the blood of Jesus, all my sins are forgiven. The blood of Jesus Christ, God's Son, is cleansing me now from all sin. Through the blood of Jesus, I am justified, made righteous, just as if I had never sinned. Through the blood of Jesus, I am sanctified, made holy, set apart for God. My body is a temple for the Holy Spirit, redeemed, cleansed, sanctified by the blood of Jesus. I belong to the Lord Jesus Christ, God's Son-body, soul and spirit. His blood protects me from all evil. Because of the blood of Jesus, Satan has no more power over me, no more place in me. I renounce him and his hosts completely and declare them to be my enemies. Jesus said: "These signs shall follow believers, in My name shall they cast out devils." I am a believer, and in the name of Jesus Christ, I exercise my authority and expel all evil spirits. I command them to leave me now, according to the Word of God and in the name of Jesus.

The above prayer is an adaptation of one used by Derek Prince, and has proved very helpful in breaking the power of demons. Used by permission.

Prayer of Refusal Against Satan

Lord Jesus, today I commit my life to you totally, body, soul and spirit. I ask that You bend, break, and mold me to make me into the man that You want me to be.

Satan, I come against you and all your hosts and reject everything you would have for me today. I refuse all the snares, pits and traps you have set to draw me away from the

Lord Jesus Christ. I rebuke you, Satan, and all your hosts, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ.

Father, I ask for Your best in my life today and that Your will and purposes be done in and through me. I also ask that any sorrow, pain, suffering or affliction which will be used of You to keep me in Your perfect will and make me a yielded vessel for Your work will come to me today.

I ask that my life be used to bring honor, praise and glory to You today in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. Amen.

Note: Meditate on Romans 12:1, 2.

Vows and Curses

In the Bible, vows were solemn promises to God, either positive or negative. Under the Mosaic law, the vows and promises of dependents such as children, unmarried daughters and wives were void, except when ratified by the express or tacit consent of the father or husband. This afforded protection to them against rash vows. The whole matter is explored in Numbers 30. Other Scriptures dealing with vows include: Ecclesiastes 5:4-6; Numbers 30:2; Deuteronomy 23:21, 22.

Broken vows can be a source of real trouble. That is why Jonah repented and renewed his vows in the belly of the fish, saying, "I will pay my vows. If a vow is discovered to be contrary to Scripture and dishonoring to God, it should be formally renounced and forgiveness sought for making it (I John 1:9). A vow that is expressly evil or is for an evil purpose should never be made nor kept. To keep such a vow, for the sake of consistency, is to compound one evil by another (Matthew 5:33-37).

A curse has been defined as: Uttering a wish of evil against one; to imprecate evil; to call for mischief or injury to fall

upon; to execrate, to bring evil upon or to; to blast, vex, harass or torment with great calamities. Such curses represent individuals working in concert with a specific form of evil spirit activity. We have dealt with cases where Satanic covens of witches and warlocks, or even a person merely dabbling with witchcraft and sorcery, cast spells, potions, enchantments and curses on a person (Psalm 109:15-18).

We have found that even the wrong kinds of "prayer" and laying on of hands, or "prayers" at a distance, have resulted in hurtful and dismaying results with the effects of a curse. It is not even necessary for the person on the receiving end of this to know what is happening. Demons will come and go into "praying." activity in susceptible persons in answer to this type of For example: Curses came on a man and woman through a couple who were casting witchcraft curses in a Full Gospel Church! the pair who were "praying" for the sick had no idea what evil they were wreaking on those who came to them for help. The man had received his witchcraft (unconsciously to him) by studying extensively in the writings of Edgar Cayce and other occult writers. He had in turn transmitted this power to his wife. He taught a Sunday school class which the demons referred to as "the Marketplace," explaining that "Dark Sayings" were given out there in the guise of Bible teaching. The woman supposed that she had a gift of divine healing and laid hands on those seeking prayer. This instead bestowed curses on them and they became worse, not better. Many evil spirits were thus transferred to open and unsuspecting persons receiving "ministry" at the hands of these two dupes. Were they sincere? Yes, they were, but deluded and deceived! Included in the great number of evil spirits which had to be cast from the people we dealt with were: A ruler, Terminal Illnesses, controlled Cancer, Muscular Dystrophy, Leukemia,

Tuberculosis, and several varieties of heart disease. This underlines how vital it is for the gift of discerning of spirits to operate, in order to separate the operation of occult spirits from the genuine healings by the Lord. Use Galatians 3:13 and Colossians 2:14 to break curses.

Types Of Occultism

Occultism is participation or involvement in any way with fortune telling, magic practices, spiritism, or false religious cults and teachings. Contact with occult may have occurred in childhood. Occult involvement can come from previous generations (Deuteronomy 5:7-9).

FORTUNE TELLING (Proverbs 3:5-7)
palm-reading, crystal ball, cards, tea leaves, handwriting analysis, games such as Ouija, ESP, Telepathy, Kabala, Horoscope, Clairvoyant, Voodoo, etc; pendulums, horoscopes, and astrology: Anything that predicts your future or advises your life. Isaiah 47:13, 2 Kings 1:1-4

MAGIC PRACTICES AND SPIRITISM (Deut. 18:9-12) mediums and seances, table-tipping, levitation, necromancy, communicating with the dead or spirit guides, automatic writing;
divining, water-witching, or dowsing with forked sticks or other objects for water, oil, minerals, underground sewer & water lines, etc.;

ESP, PK (psychokinesis), telepathy, clairvoyance, clairaudience, psychic powers, second sight, hypnosis, self-hypnosis, remote influence of the subconscious mind of others, auras, metaphysics, mental science, self-realization, visions, trances, dreams;

superstition, witchcraft, black, white, and neutral magic, charms, good luck items, fetishes, runes, amulets, talismans, mascots, medals, crux ansanta (ankh), birth signs, spells, incantations, potions, sorcery, curses, materialization or apport, apparitions, ghosts, poltergeists; magic healing thru wart or burn charming, powwow, spiritualism, psychic, spirit, or meta- physical healing, Christian Science healing, rod or pendulum diagnosis, trance diagnosis, hypnosis, acupuncture, yin-yang; All books, literature, music, etc. dealing with occultism.

FALSE RELIGIOUS
CULTS AND TEACHINGS (Galatians 1:8, 9)
Jehovah's Witnesses, Christian Science, Rosicrucians, Theosophy, Unity, Mormonism, Unitarians, Bahai, Spiritualism, Scientology, Swedenborgianism, Christodelphianism, Inner Peace Movement, Spiritual Frontiers Fellowship, Assoc. for Research & Enlightenment, Religious Research Foundation of America, Edgar Cayce, Jean Dixon, Arthur Ford, Ruth Montgomery, soul travel, Eckankar, astral projection; eastern religions and teachings such as Zen, Tao, Buddha, Hare Krishna, transcendental meditation, I Ching, reincarnation, karma; yoga; idols, incense;

To Exorcise Inanimate Objects

In the case of objects dedicated to demons (idols, artifacts, etc.), the best course of action is to destroy them. However, it is well to check secondhand cars, homes, and apartments also because if the former owners had ouija boards, or other occult paraphernalia, or were involved in serious bondage to sin, then there is every reason to suspect that evil spirits could be lingering behind. These spirits can and will cause trouble to the new owners.

Keep in mind that any prayers offered to anyone or anything other than God the Father, Son and Holy Spirit constitute prayers and/or worship to demons. Very often these are answered in the form of curses, for demons can and do respond to those who request of them. Remember also that the one offering the false prayer may be utterly deceived and think they pray to God, but the results are the same in either case. When detected, curses must be broken in order to rout the demons.

We suggest that two believers go on a mission such as this, with Bible in hand. The verses from Scripture may be read aloud in unison or separately. Pray for discernment of spirits and for God to reveal objects which may have occult spirits and power. These should be destroyed. Look for little Mexican sun gods, idols, incense, Buddhas, hand carved objects from Africa or the Orient, Ouija boards, anything connected with astrology, horoscopes, fortune telling, and so on. Books or objects associated with witchcraft, good luck charms, or the cult religions (metaphysics, Christian Science, Jehovah's Witnesses, etc.), rock and roll records and tapes all fall in the category of things which have been often loaded with evil spiritual power.

Verbally denounce Satan and his power and all of his demon hosts and claim authority as a believer-priest because of the name of Jesus Christ and the authority of His shed blood. After prayer let the believers alternate reading Scriptures (preferably in every room of the house) and claim the cleansing of the area by demanding in Jesus' name that the spirits leave and never return. Do not overlook the dark places where spirits like to hide, such as closets, attics, basements, crawl spaces, cupboards, etc.

Some Scripture which has proven useful in this include: Revelation 12:11; Revelation 22:3; Colossians 2:14, 15;

Galatians 3:13; Deuteronomy 21:23; Deuteronomy 32:5; Numbers 23:8, 23; II Samuel 7:29.

In some cases the door lintel and window sills have been anointed by touching them with olive oil. Other things such as statues have been so anointed in Jesus' name and many times the demonic power is checked or destroyed. Each thing and area should be claimed as ground for the Lord and taken back from Satan and his demons. Any known sins or occult connections should be renounced and confessed as sin and put away. Any specific areas of demonic activity or influence of which you are aware should be denounced by name (Proverbs 3:33).

A Special Word to the Women

In I Corinthians 11:10, Paul states that a wife should be subject to (literally, come under the protection of) her own husband, and "for this cause ought the woman to have power on her head, because of the angels." The Phillips translation: "she ought to bear on her head an outward sign of man's authority for all the angels to see." Revised Standard: ". . .a woman ought to have a veil on her head " New English Bible: ". . . it is a woman's duty to have a sign of authority on her head. . ." Todays English: ". . . a woman should have a covering over her head to show that she is under her husband's authority ." Amplified: ". . . she should be subject to his (her husband's) authority, and should have a covering on her head as a token, a symbol of her submission to authority, because of the angels.“

Since the angels of God are ministering spirits to the believers, they are evidently not in view in this passage. They protect and help the saints of God. The angels referred to have to be the fallen ones (demons) who are ever seeking an opportunity to do harm to human beings. Because, like Eve,

women are particularly susceptible to deception in the spiritual realm, God has, in love, made a provision of protection for them in this vulnerable area. Those who take advantage of it are sheltered and blessed, those who arrogantly demand their "rights" and equality with men, lay themselves open to many hurtful and harmful delusions and even destruction.

The protection God has ordained is through the shield of a male authority over the woman. In the case of an unmarried girl this is through her father. A married woman has her husband as a cover. In the case of a woman or girl who does not fit into these categories, the pastor, elders and men of the local church can serve as a spiritual cover and protection for the woman.

This cover is effective only if it represents a heart attitude of submission and obedience coupled with the meek and quiet spirit which God finds so highly desirable in a woman. (I Peter 3:1-6). No amount of head covering on the outside can replace the inner attitudes it is to represent in token. This explains I Timothy 2:12-14 which forbids women to teach or have authority over men, and to keep silent. Sadly, many of the cults have originated in the manipulations of a sincere but deceived and misguided woman.

Women operating under scriptural authority and cover can be a tremendous blessing in teaching other women and children, and can pray and prophesy in public (Joel 2:28, 29; I Corinthians 11:5). However, they are specifically excluded from leadership in the home and church where God has ordained that men lead and bear the load and responsibility. Because of this, and because she can never be the husband of one wife, nor "rule his own house well," she is automatically excluded from preaching or pastoring. When operating under Bible guidelines, a woman can contribute much but it

is not hers to lead nor assume the authority which God has reserved for men.

To say women are not fitted by God for leadership is not to say they are inferior. A dump truck and a pick up truck are not the same. But to say that because the pick up would break down under the loads for which a dump truck is designed is not to say the smaller vehicle is inferior. It is designed and built for a different purpose. In like manner, women break down under loads designed for men to carry. It is always wise to follow the manufacturer's recommendations.

Testimony About a Woman's Head Covering

After a prayer meeting at my sister's home, I began to get a migraine headache, so I asked for prayer. As they prayed, a demon manifested and began to yell and scream, fighting angrily. A scarf was placed over my head and the fight was really on!

I felt as though 3,000 pounds of bricks were on my head, yet it was a chiffon scarf, weighing next to nothing. The demon fought savagely, kicking and scratching, in an attempt to rip the scarf from my head and break free. When this failed he blustered and threatened all present with terrible things if they did not take "that damned rag off of her head.

When the women refused and continued to pound him with prayer and the name of Jesus, he began to beg piteously for the head covering to be removed. He offered all kinds of rewards to the people if they would just take it off. The haggling and bargaining and struggling continued for a long time and the pressure on my head kept mounting until it felt as if it was in a vice being crushed. Suddenly, with horrible screaming, a spirit of Rebellion convulsed my entire body and left. With him went the migraine he was causing.

I now know that the Scripture teaches a woman to wear a covering on her head when praying or prophesying as a token of submission to her husband. I have been careful to observe this rule ever since that night. Praise God for His wonderful love and provision for us.

The Roots of Rejection

"As for my people, children are their oppressors, and women rule over them. O my people, they which lead thee cause thee to err, and destroy the way of thy paths" (Isaiah 3:12).

The curse of destruction of the family priesthood (which is centered in the father, usually is the result of inherited family curses) paves the way for the spirit of Rejection in a child. This leads to a withdrawal of the father from his role and position of authority and eventuates in a lack of love for and interest in his wife and children.

Frustrated by his lack of leadership and her inability to respect him as a man, the woman (who herself may have inherited curses of dominance) begins to take over and direct the home by the Jezebel spirit. This involves usurpation of authority, dominance and rebellion. All of this is the essence of witchcraft. She controls the family through emotional blackmail and conditional love.

The child is caught up in the conflict between the parents and becomes its chief victim. The offspring will end up with an inability to give or receive love and because of the confusion of the authority pattern in the home, he is set up for schizophrenia (double-mindedness) and paranoia to gain a foothold.

The spirits in the mother will coerce the male child, forbidding him to assert his masculinity or to engage in activities which would develop him as man. If he wants her

approval and love he must submit to her domination and control, losing his self-respect. If he disobeys and rebels, he loses her love and is tormented by guilt. As he grows older, he often becomes confused about his own sexual identity, fears marriage, and drifts toward perversion and homosexuality as an escape from mounting sexual pressures and fears. He will reflect his mother's disdain for and despising of his father's weakness and/or refusal to cope with the dominance in the home. Often the father turns to his work, drink, other women or divorce in an effort to keep his own sanity. He is so preoccupied with his own problems that he is indifferent to or helpless in the face of the problems of his family.

The progression of destruction in the life of a female child is much the same as that of the boy, except that she will, consciously or unconsciously absorb and manifest the same attitudes and spirits which drive her mother. The use of emotional blackmail in the home sets the stage for the entrance of doublemindedness, especially in the children. In addition there will usually be a deeply buried spirit of Hatred of Parents in the child, which will lead to the hounding of the individual by Guilt and Condemnation. This terrible pattern of disaster in families is self-propagating and can perpetuate itself for generations in families unless someone learns the truth, breaks the curses and reverts back to God's order for the family.

There is a definite pattern to the entrance of Rejection, which in turns opens the door for Rebellion: (1) Curse of destruction of the family priesthood [centered in father]; (2) Curses and spirits of withdrawal of the father and dominance by the mother; (3) Spirit of improper discipline (usually works through the mother, either overpermissive or too harsh, may associate with the curse of rebellion against discipline on the child's part; (4) Spirit of lying to escape

punishment; (5) Curse and spirits of guilt; (6) Curse and spirits of distrust (resulting from guilt); (7) Curse and spirits involving lack of communication between parent and child; (8) Curse and spirits of rejection ("My parents don't love me . . . . I can't even talk with them, etc.")

Many times rejection can be broken by following this progression: Break the curses mentioned in items 1 through 8, having the person confess sin and renounce the spirits, then force them to leave.

First, bind the spirit of Rejection and his friend Rebellion and ask the Lord to put a block or wedge between them so that they cannot mutually reinforce each other. Then attack Rejection by digging out the roots and shields before confronting him. He is much easier to remove after cutting away the "underbrush" of shielding demons, rather than mounting an offensive directly against him while his forces are intact.

Beware, Try The Spirits

I must mention something about certain types of people who may block or hinder deliverance. Probably you are aware of groups who practice snakehandling and even drink poisons to demonstrate their spirituality. This is a demonic mockery of Mark 16:15-18, for "thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.' Jesus refused to use His power for vainglory.

A woman from Tennessee visited our church and requested deliverance from evil spirits. Following every service, for a week, she was prayed for and great numbers of demons left her. On her last night at the church, she testified of her deliverances and was praising God for what had been accomplished already.

During the invitation, she came for prayer and the remaining demons were forced to manifest and began

leaving, one by one. Several workers were assisting in the deliverance. Suddenly, from behind the workers came a shrill, chanting voice. "Ohhhhh Jeee-sus, Jeeesus, Jeee-sus! Ohhh! Guh-low-ree, Hal-la-lu-yah, Ohhhhh, Jeee-sus. . . . . "This was repeated over and over and could be clearly heard over the shrieking of the demons.

We looked around and saw a woman whom none of us knew, hands shaking and waving spasmodically in the air. Her body was weaving and swaying to and fro jerking as she was loudly "doing her thing." We shook our heads, for we had seen this sort of thing before. One of the workers moved over and began to talk with her, in an effort to quiet her and distract her away from the lady who was receiving prayer. The stranger airily informed him that she was from a certain Pentecostal church and she "knew all about deliverance." Then she went at it again, chanting, shaking and swaying.

Workers tried to stay between her and the one in deliverance. In spite of this interference, she darted around to the side and managed to reach in and grab the subject's hand. As soon as this happened, the body relaxed, and the demons stopped manifesting and took a breather. This touch from the woman gave them aid and comfort, there was no mistaking it!

Courteously but determinedly we managed to push away the "helpful" woman and resumed the work of extracting the demons. She stood as close as possible and continued chanting. When a demon would be on the verge of leaving, the woman would become very agitated and wave both arms and shout in a weird gutteral language. Immediately the demon would resist and refuse to come out and it was plain that he was being helped by the visitor.

An elder was summoned to deal with her. He asked her politely to be seated on a pew and to simply sit and pray quietly (for she protested that she wanted to help that

woman). She stood her ground defiantly, proudly assuring him that she was not afraid and again loudly proclaimed for all to hear that she "knew all about deliverance." With this she attempted to push past him to get back at the woman. When he was quite firm and insistent about her doing as she had been told, she snorted angrily, snatched her handbag from the pew, and stormed from the church, muttering furiously about these "narrow-minded Baptists."

After this the deliverance proceeded smoothly and before long the building was filled with singing and shouting praises to the Lord Jesus for His deliverance of bound ones. Interestingly enough, the spirits cast from the woman that night included a great number of religious ones. False Tongues, Heresy, False Gifts, Woman Preacher, Another Jesus (II Corinthians 11:4), and others left. Satan evidently sent in reinforcements in the person of the woman visitor to block or hinder the deliverance.

Watch out for people who come in and attempt to take over, dominate or outdo the regular workers. At our church we feel a deep sense of responsibility to protect those who come to us for prayer. Not just everyone who walks in is welcome to minister to those in need, but only those who are known and have accepted the authority of the pastor and elders in the local assembly.

False religious spirits seem to particularly enjoy making people twitch and shake, like puppets on a string. We have seen so much jerking and spasmodic muscular contractions produced by demonic manifestations that frankly we find all such "holy jerking" to be suspect. Demons twist and distort the Holy Spirit never does.

Not every group that practices "gifts" or "knows all about deliverance" is of God (Matthew 7:21, 22). Try the spirits. One good way to discern the true from the false is to look for the fruit of the Holy Spirit (Galatians 5:22, 23). Be aware that

Satan will try to slip in to hinder you (Galatians 1:6,7). Test the spirits by God's Word. John wrote: "Believe not every spirit. . . (I John 4:1-6), and earnestly warned that the spirit of Antichrist and the spirit of error (deception) were already actively at work among them. They were to doubt every supernatural teaching and teacher until they were proven to be God.

Is Karate For Christians?

Karate has swept across the nation and has become very popular. Encouraged by many civil and military organizations, it has been included in some school and college curriculums. Some fundamental churches have even sponsored demonstrations as an inducement to increase youth attendance in church and Sunday School. Currently popularized on T.V. and in the movies, this deadly art, under several titles, has gained widespread acceptance in every strata of our society.

Karate is a system of fighting without weapons, founded in the 17th century, and evolved out of ancient jui-jitzu. The object of the program of training was to be able to cripple or kill an antagonist. Combined with the moral training of Zen Buddhism, its purpose was to develop Samurai warriors. The body extremities were toughened to become weapons capable of smashing or maiming an opponent.

Today Karate is often taught in conjunction with various forms of transcendental meditation (similar to Yogi) to "psych" up the students to heights of greater effectiveness. The supernatural aspect is the most deadly part of the game. To go beyond the simplest basics in karate, the meditation is essential. This puts it in the category of an occult "religious" exercise and makes it extremely dangerous. We have dealt with individuals who had come under occult oppression and

bondage by simply following Yoga exercise routines-without the meditation. Those who were also involved in meditation were even more severely oppressed. In ways which we do not completely understand, the various positions in some way open the way for demon spirits to enter and torment an individual.

Throughout the New Testament there is overwhelming teaching that God is opposed to Karate and the violence it represents Jesus warns in Matthew 26:52 that those who resort to the sword (violence) will die that way. Ephesians 6 speaks of wrestling not with flesh and blood but with spiritual adversaries. 2 Corinthians 10:3, 4 continues in this vein and in Luke 10:19 Christians are given authority over their enemies by the empowering of the Holy Spirit.

Since Karate is heavily involved in the occult, those who dabble with it will bring curses upon themselves and upon their descendants to the third and fourth generations. (Deuteronomy 6:8, 7:25, 26; 11:28; 12:3; 13:6-10)

A 20 Year Old College Man and Karate

When I was told that I could take free Karate lessons at the university where I was a student, I jumped at the chance. A born-again believer, I had some qualms about Karate's obvious connection with the pagan religions of the east, but I brushed these aside for I was having too much fun and was really quite proud of what I was doing.

About a month later, I decided to concentrate my study in the Japanese school and was soon one of the better White Belt fighters in the school (Dojo). I enjoyed the praise of my classmates, but especially that of my Black Belt instructor. He ran his school with iron discipline and took pride in the fact that his club sustained a greater number of injuries than did the "softer" Korean group. There was a fierce Mafia-type

loyalty and revenge system in the Karate "family" and they would take up any offense against a member of the group.

All the classes began and ended with Zen meditation, just as Christian meetings usually begin and end with prayer. It was a solemn time when we sat in a line facing the instructor, barefooted and dressed in our Karate garb. We were required to kneel in the Zen meditation stance, an uncomfortable position in which we sat on our bare feet with the right foot crossed over the left. One of the higher belts would then lead the meditation saying, "Close your eyes very slowly . . . now clear your mind of all thought." After a long pause he would instruct us to picture a still pond, or a turbulent black cloud, or a red dot on a white wall. Each session varied, and some were quite poetic. In each, we could sense a definite unifying force flowing among and through us.

My instructor told us that the board and brick breaking he did was active Zen meditation and that only ten percent of the force involved was due to physical strength. When we first began the meditation and sparring sessions, I would silently use my prayer language (received seven months earlier) throughout the entire time. As time went on however, it became difficult to pray and finally was impossible.

My spiritual life was in a decline and steadily became worse. From being a fervent witness and Bible student, I became careless and slipshod and never got around to prayer and Bible study. I was always too busy it seemed. I became involved with a girl who was not the right type of person and soon found myself in bars, drinking and dancing to Rock and Roll music. Still I went on, miserable and unfulfilled but not coming back to the Lord. When the girl friend suddenly dropped me, I was jolted enough to realize what a shambles my spiritual life had become.

I went home on a holiday and sought out Pastor Worley and began to talk with him about the misery and discontent I felt. When he learned about the Karate, he explained that any form of transcendental meditation lays one open to all sorts of demonic invasion from the occult sphere. He urged that I confess the whole thing as sin and renounce all connections with it immediately. I did this and even brought my Karate Ghi (uniform) and Green Belt diploma to burn. It was very difficult to ignite and burned slowly with a strange green fire. I had some relief but was still filled with tension.

By Friday night when I came to the church, I was burning with a very high fever. I kept hearing a voice telling me to go home and get in bed for I was a very sick young man. When the invitation came, I staggered down the aisle, scarcely able to walk. When the pastor rebuked the fever, my legs buckled and I collapsed in a heap on the floor. Suddenly something within me roused up angrily, resisting, and my entire body began to shake as if with violent chills.

The next thing I remember is that my body began thrashing wildly and out of control and eight strong men were holding me as best they could. As one prayed in my ear, I felt horribly nauseated and began to gag and retch, my stomach heaving. I kept feeling as if I would suffocate if I was unable to break free. Hatred blazed in me and I heard weird growlings and roarings coming from my throat and mouth. I felt my face change and contort out of shape as the animal-like noises kept erupting through me, seemingly coming from somewhere deep in my intestines. Periodically a gutteral language would chatter forth from my mouth, raging, and I would feel waves of disgust, fear and hatred for the people who were praying with me-and these were some of my best friends! It was almost as if I were detached, a spectator and observer of what was happening, and not actually involved directly.

The demons began to spit in the faces of the believers gathered around, and the violence and hatred seemed particularly fierce as the brothers showed me Christian love. As love flowed from their very touch, it was as if my whole body was engulfed in flame and burning furiously and the demons screamed with unbelieveable volume. It grew more and more difficult to breathe and it was as if I could not get sufficient oxygen. As the men would call on the demons to leave, my whole body would jerk and shudder. When one or more spirits would shoot up through my throat, shrieking and howling, I thought I would surely choke to death.

I have no idea how many of the foul things came out, several hundred or more I would imagine. I was left weak, depleted, literally worn out and soaked in sweat from my head to my feet. Over two full hours had dragged by as the conflict raged. Some demon spirits gave their names as they left; many, many others did not. Some I remember were: Shuto, Tyquando, Kung Fu, Lust of the Black Belt, Murder, Lust of the Brown Belt, Lust of the Green Belt, Lust for Power, Pride, Hatred, Violence, Fear, Resentment, Despression, Bitterness, Sexual Lusts, Homosexuality, Suicide, Falling from Grace, and Rock and Roll Music.

When it was over, I was so weak that it was difficult to even lift my hands to praise the Lord. My fever was completely gone and I was so tired I just wanted to sleep. When I arrived home, I tumbled into bed and immediately dozed off. However, in the middle of the night I awoke and began to vomit violently, gagging, retching and choking, as still more hordes of evil spirits left me. This lasted for a long time, then I sank back into an exhausted sleep again. The next day I had a sudden and dramatic repeat performance and a great many more demons left me. I thank the Lord every day for my deliverance from evil spirits and for the privilege of walking

with Him. Thank God for a church which ministers deliverance in Jesus' name!

Mind Control

Mind Control is a spirit whom we have met more recently than most. This is a very powerful family of spirits and may enter a person through a variety of doors. We first encountered him in dealing with Karate but later found him in connection with hypnosis, meditation, ESP, positive thinking, stoicism, asceticism, traumatic shocks, drugs and yoga.

One of the indications that you have tripped upon a mind control spirit is the immediate attack on the workers minds. The pressure can be terrific and hinder both normal thought and the operation of the gift of discernment of spirits. He seems to feed off the spiritual energy of other types of spirits, almost as though it were a series of power plants, able to shunt power at will into a particular outlet. He can garner energy, not only from spirits in the subject being prayed for but from others in the vicinity. Thus you will face the combined energy and power of a group of spirits, all fed through Mind Control to focus against you.

A prayer found effective against this maneuver goes something like this: "Heavenly Father, Please send angels to seal off every door through which Mind Control is receiving reinforcement and aid. Block every access with the blood of Jesus and in Jesus' Name, Father, I ask that all spirits in this place from which Mind Control and his troops could draw strength be sealed off. Send angels to break and prevent all communication of such spirits with their ruler princes and with Satan himself, in the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ, and by His shed blood I ask all this. Amen.

We have found Mind Control to be a resourceful foe, but have seen him defeated and cast out. He often works with other demons but is noticeable in battle for his composure and arrogant confidence, until the final moments.

Let me relate one way in which these demons can bring special torment in the area of masturbation. Several young men asked for help in dealing with a peculiar problem. Although they had mastered and broken the masturbation habit, periodically they would masturbate in their sleep, rousing enough to be conscious of what was occurring, but not sufficiently to stop. Orgasm was followed with deep guilt and feelings of failure, along with constant doubts of their own sincerity. Accusations would fly in their minds that the action was deliberate and that they were seeking to escape responsibility for their action. Try as he would, the man involved could not wake up in time.

We discovered, in deliverance, that the cause of this phenomena was Mind Control. The Mind Control spirit gloated over the torment and misery he had inflicted, cackling cruelly as he told how he made sure that the young man was conscious of what was happening, but powerless to stop. He sneered that such partial consciousness was necessary to exact maximum suffering from the victim afterward.

In order to break this strongly entrenched power, it was necessary to bind Mind Control, then break his control over Masturbation so we might attack this subordinate spirit directly. After he and other supporting spirits were cast out (lust, evil dreams, sexual fantasies) we carried the attack to Mind Control. Weakened by his losses, after a fierce battle he left.

Names of Demons

When I first began to assemble material for this book, I painstakingly collected and attempted to categorize (from notes and tapes of deliverance sessions) the names which demons had given us over a period of many months. They kept piling up until there were over 1300 of them. Besides those who gave their names, thousands fled without telling their title. My thought in compiling such a list was to give an overview of the sweeping and unbelievable way in which demons have insinuated themselves into and intruded into every conceivable area of human personality and endeavor.

I am thoroughly convinced that demons change their names according to the fads and fashions of the day, age and civilization in which they appear. Therefore, there would be no way in which there could ever be an end to the listing. Their names are, for the most part, descriptive of their work and function. Therefore, I decided to drop the actual list from the book.

As mentioned elsewhere, demons tend to gather in family clusters. They appear to dread aloneness. Among the most common groupings: The Lust Package-Lust, Masturbation, Adultery, Fornication, Lust of the eyes, Lust of the Flesh, Perversion, Sodomy, Oral Sex, Homosexuality, Filthy Dreams, Filthy Imaginations, Pornography, Filthy Conversation, etc. [Guilt and Condemnation are always present in this nest too]; another group commonly found is: Loneliness, Despair, Hopelessness, Suicide and Death; Rock and Roll music spirits confess that they bring in all the above mentioned packages; plus: Rebellion, Revolution, Hatred for Parents [and all authority], and all sorts of drug and occult spirits. These are only a few of the more common combinations.

The pairing of opposing spirits to destroy a person is an effective technique often used. Common are: Sadism and Masochism; Selfishness and a Do-Gooder spirit; Rebellion and Rejection; Inferiority and Superiority; Pride and Guilt/Condemnation; and many others. In one woman we found spirits of Oily and Dry Scalp paired. They laughed cruelly and said, "We've had a ball with her. No matter what she does it is wrong. If she treats Oily Scalp, then Dry Scalp takes over to plague her, and visa versa." These pairs of spirits ball. work to keep a person bouncing between them like a ping pong ball.

Although I cannot say flatly that every disease and ailment is always rooted in a spirit or spirits, all the cases with which we have dealt were definitely demonic. I mean by that that when the spirits were identified and gave up the battle and left, healing occured and all symptoms and pains vanished. There is much which we do not understand about healing, but I personally suspect that there is some demonic root cause or agitation behind the upset, chemical imbalances, breakdown of resistance to germs and viruses which lead to sicknesses abnormal growths and other ailments. It may be carefully hidden and remote, but I believe it is there if we could but see it.

The Chain of Command in the Demonic Realm

Demons are very conscious of authority and adhere slavishly to the "chain of command" and the line of authority structure. There are Chief Kings and Chief Princes and under them are Kings and Princes who rule over various geographical and spiritual areas. There are kingdoms, principalities, dominions and powers which are administered by Kings and princes.

For example, each state in the United States is ruled over by a Prince. Some examples: Illinois-Roman Catholic; Indiana-Rebellion; Pennsylvania-Woman Preacher; Louisiana-Southern Curses; Texas-Power; Minnesota-Adultery; Wisconsin-Madness (mental disorders); Michigan-Psychology; New York-Sickness; Washington D.C.-Rebellion; Arkansas-Occult. At the time this was written Florida had changed from control by the Prince of the Occult to the Prince of Fantasy and California had switched from Woman Preacher to Fantasy.

The control of a geographical area seems to rest on the success of a prince in controlling the majority of the persons within that place, but it also has to do with the ferocity and power of that prince. Raw power is the key to control in the Satanic structure.

A General is in charge of a Legion (6,000) while a Prince will control a number of Legions. A Ruler or Captain commands a cohort (600), and there can be Chief Captains and Chief Rulers with still more authority. A Centurion controls 100 demons and if he controls less than a hundred demons he is called a Strongman. Any demon in authority will direct how many, and when and where pain spirits are to attack and how sustained the attack is to be. These pain spirits are called Imps by those in charge.

Because of the rigid authority structure, a wise move in dealing with spirits is to bind all the spirits, especially the ruling ones and the ones of violence, fighting and murder. If you are successful in this you will prevent them from galvanizing their strength against you and the workers, or at least will hinder it. If after binding, you are unable to dislodge the leaders, by-pass them and begin to pick off their root spirits. These will be the lesser demons on whose strength they rely for holding out. By digging away at the roots, you diminish the ruler's power and weaken them. This

makes them easier to throw out later. It is always in order to harass and wear down the enemy.

Demonic Extremism

Demons have revealed that they specialize in extremes. It is relatively easy to understand their workings when it comes to evil; however, more obscure and often overlooked is their sinister activity in seizing upon basically good and upbuilding qualities, and driving them to become a compulsive caricature. In this manner desirable character traits and goals which should be integrating and reinforcing to the person become instead disintegrating and weakening factors.

For example, we dealt with a man who, as a young boy, was subjected to repeat and severe physical disciplining by a harsh and unloving father. After such episodes, the father would sternly forbid the little fellow to cry lest more punishment be forthcoming. The terrified boy, to maintain his sanity, developed a defense mechanism by overemphasizing self control (a good trait). He adopted a stoic resistance to showing emotion. At some point, early in childhood, the spirit of Mind Control entered with a great number of subordinate spirits following in subsequent years.

At 19 a broken marriage caused a nervous breakdown. This enabled the spirits to consolidate their grip. An enlistment in the Marine Corps introduced him to Karate. Working up to a Black Belt degree allowed these spirits to completely dominate his life. He became unable to give or receive love or to develop a meaningful relationship with any other person. His conversion and subsequent deliverance from many spirits gave him a new life at the age of thirty.

Another young man, driven by sibling rivalry and jealousies, determined to excell in his school studies (certainly

commendable) but because it became obsessive with rigid self-discipline, Mind Control and a spirit called Perpetual Student entered. The latter spirit drives people to be ever learning but never to find any real satisfaction in their achievements. Aiding this spirit was Worldly Wisdom, Philosophy, Intellectualism, Psychology, etc. Other helpers were added along the way, including a large group of Fantasy spirits. These came from science-fiction, especially from the works of Tolkien. Slowly the spirits had tightened their hold on mind and personality until there was little freedom to act. Deliverance brought spectacular relief to him and a distinct change in personality.

We have dealt with a spirit called Perfectionism. While it is good to do one's best, overemphasis here can lead to the entrance of evil spirits which harass. This brings frustration to both the victim and his associates. There are many other areas in which the spirits operate. A spirit of Arminianism in theology can lead to base enslavement to rabid fears and terrors of falling, destroying faith and confidence, keeping the person in a state of abject misery. By the same token, a spirit of Predestination can lead to a presumptuousness on God's mercy and cause spiritual paralysis and carelessness. It can even engender an attitude of "what's going to be will be whether it happens or not."

The Way of Victory

To hold deliverance after it has been achieved--use the Word of God! Deliverance is a walk, a way of life, not an isolated incident in the life of the believer. God does not set you free to "do your own thing," but to serve the Lord Jesus Christ out of a pure heart fervently. Remember your inheritance in Christ and the shared power and glory that is

yours as a joint heir with the Son of God. Listed below are some helpful Scriptures to meditate on:

Ephesians 1:19-22; Colossians 2:15; I Corinthians 15:57, 58; Isaiah 41:10; I Samuel 2:9; Psalm 56:13; Psalm 116:8; Jude 24; Proverbs 19:10; Psalm 35:1-9; Revelation 12:11, and many many more.

When you are troubled in any area, you will find that the Bible has an answer and a passage which will defeat the enemy. For example, the following verses have been found helpful to those who are troubled by spirits of insomnia, sleeplessness and nightmares: Psalm 3:5; 4:8; Ezekiel 34:25; Proverbs 6:20- 22; 3:24; Ecclesiastes 5:12; and Psalm 127:2.

If you become troubled by the seeming slowness of deliverance in your life, read and think on: Ezekiel 34:25-31; Deuteronomy 7:20-24; and Exodus 7:20-24.

The Snare of Sex Perversion

Romans 13:12-The night is far spent, the day is at hand, let us therefore put off the works of darkness.

Ephesians 5:11-And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.

One of the grossest and most prevalent areas of sin in our “liberated" culture is the open espousal and practice of the ancient arts of sex perversion. From the radio, TV, rock music, books, and articles and even from some clergymen and “Christian” counsellors the word goes forth, “If it feels good, do it!" Under the guise of liberty and sexual freedom, these heralds of a new day have actually succeeded in hoodwinking thousands of gullible people into terrible bondage.

God's Word still declares: "Whosoever committeth sin is the servant (slave) of sin (John 8:34). Paul described these false voices as: “Traitors, heady, highminded, lovers of pleasure

more than lovers of God they . . . creep . . . into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts . . ." (II Timothy 3:4, 6). These abominable practices which brought fire and brimstone upon Sodom and in our day. Gommorah have put many under terrible spiritual oppression

Most people seem unaware of or indifferent to the blistering condemnation God's Word brings against all sexual perversions. Such practices have always formed the backbone of heathen idol worship and is an integral part of witchcraft and Satan worship. The first chapter of Romans describes the three-step descent of man into depravity. First is the debasing of the God consciousness created in man to a worship of the creation rather than the Creator. The result of this is vain imaginations and a darkened heart. Step two is centering worship upon graven images (Exodus 20:4) and even the images are in descending order. First worshipped are the likenesses of men, the apex of God's creation, then birds, next four-footed beasts, and finally creeping things. As a result of this rebellion, the Lord gives them up to illicit sex between men and women, thus destroying the marriage relationship and undermining the structure of the home. The third step down is homosexuality and perversion, again practiced in worship of the "gods" set up to foolish and blinded men. This the Bible declares leads to a reprobate mind and, as one translator says, they receive a "mark in their personality" through indulgence in these sins. This is followed by a great list of sins made easy by the progression into lust and sexual perversions.

Fornication is sometimes said to refer to illicit sex between unmarried persons, but it is actually a general term for all unlawful sexual acts. In Scriptures incest, adultery and idolatrous sex orgies are all called fornication (Matthew 5:32; I Corinthians 5:1; 10:5-8; and Exodus 32:1-25).

Adultery is voluntary sexual intercourse between a married person and someone who is not their legitmate mate.

Effeminate refers to a homosexual man, a catamite (I Corinthians 6:9).

Abusers of themselves with mankind (I Corinthians 6:9) is the Greek word arsenokoites, or sodomite; one guilty of unnatural offenses, one who practices sodomy. According to the dictionary, this is "carnal copulation with a member of the same sex or with an animal or unnatural carnal copulation with a member of the opposite sex." Specifically sodomy refers to oral or anal copulation.

Often married persons use Hebrew 13:4 as an excuse to practice sodomy. Let us consider it in several translations:

"Let marriage be held in honor among all, and let the marriage bed be undefiled, for fornicators and adulterers God will judge“ (New American Standard).

"Both honorable marriage and chastity should be respected by all of you. God Himself will judge those who traffic in the bodies of others and defile the relationships of marriage" (Phillips).

"Marriage must be held in honor by all, and the marriage relations kept sacred. Persons who are sexually vicious and immoral God will punish" (Williams).

God has never condoned fornication, sodomy or any type of uncleanness, in or out of marriage. According to II Corinthians 10:5 God desires that we cast down imaginations which would rear up against the teachings of His Word and we are to bring every thought into captivity to Christ Jesus. Because we become what we think about, Paul points out that we should think on things that are honest, pure, lovely, virtuous, and of good report (Philippians 4:8). Peter exhorts the believers to be holy in all "manner of conversation, even as Christ is holy." In 1611 when the King James was translated, conversation was a much more

inclusive term than it is today, and embraced the whole way of living, not just what was said, and this is the sense in the Greek. God wants, not just our speech to be free from evil, but our walk, habits and mental attitudes.

There is a difference between temptation and sin. If the thought to sin never occurred, there would be no temptation. God does not promise to stop temptations, but will make a way to escape or overcome them (I Corinthians 10:13). Temptations are like birds flying over your head. You cannot possibly shoot every one, but it is your fault if one builds a nest in your hair. Just refuse to entertain the thought to sin, keep rejecting it and rebuke it verbally as from the enemy. In overcoming, believers are strengthened and although the old nature and flesh cry out for satisfaction, refuse to give the enemy ground. If the mental battle is won, the body will obey.

Sensual relates to or consists in the gratification of the senses or the indulgence of appetite; to be devoted to or preoccupied with the senses or appetites; voluptuous; deficient in moral, spiritual or intellectual interests. Synonym-carnal (See Jude 18, 19).

Evil concupiscence is an ardent desire and longing for evil, especially in the sexual area. (Colossians 3:5; I Thessalonians 4:5; Romans 7:8)

Inordinate affection refers to that which is unregulated, disorderly, exceeding reasonable limits; immoderate; excessive (Colossians 3:5).

Lasciviousness is the promoting or partaking of that which tends to produce lewd emotions; anything which fosters sexual sin and lustfulness. Both men and women can dress and/or conduct themselves in a lascivious manner thus causing others to stumble. (II Corinthians 12:21; Romans 14:13; I Corinthians 1:23; 8, 9; 1 John 2:10).

Filthy Communication is derived from the Greek word meaning useless, putrid, or obscene. Blue jokes, pornographic books, movies, pictures, rock music, profanity and blasphemy all come under this classification. (Ephesians 4:29; Colossians 3:8).

Sexual intercourse is not an evil thing when in the frame of reference intended by God. In the bonds of holy matrimony, through physical union, couples are to find a closeness and a joy and blessing impossible to attain by any other means. It becomes a spiritual as well as physical experience and is meant to fulfill both man and woman to the highest degree. This explains the devil's never-ending battle to debase and prostitute sex into a mere physical experience thus robbing it of all spiritual significance. Procreation of children is a blessed by-product but is by no means the only reason for sex.

If you are harrassed, driven and tormented by filthy memories, words or voices coming into your mind; if you are constantly undressing others with your eyes and lewed and evil thoughts constantly flood your mind; if you are a masturbator, fornicator, homosexual or lesbian; then doors have been opened for many evil spirits.

Here is a prayer which has helped many to untangle the bondage and break free:

Lord Jesus, I have been involved in sexual sin and I do now repent and confess to you that I have committed (here name specifically all of the sexual sins you can remember). I claim freedom for my body and mind from the bondage of sexual slavery and claim the promise that whosoever calls upon the Lord shall be delivered (Joel 2:32). Lord, you have promised that if I confess my sin, you will forgive my sin and cleanse

me from all unrighteousness (I John 1:9). I do now claim and accept your forgiveness and cleansing.

Satan, I rebuke you in the name of Jesus Christ my Saviour, and I am notifying you now that in His name I am reclaiming every area of my mind and body which has formerly been given over to you and your hosts. Specifically I claim freedom and cleansing in the areas of sexual sin and as a believer-priest I renounce you and your hosts and command that they leave me now in the name of Jesus Christ.

Recommended Reading List

Attack from the Spirit World, Compilation (Tyndale House).

Don Basham, **Deliver Us From Evil, Handbook of Spiritual Warfare,**

The Most Dangerous Game, Can a Christian Have a Demon?

Pat Brooks, Out in the Name of Jesus (Creation House), **Using Your Spiritual Authority** (Whitaker House), Healing of the Mind (Creation House).

Frank Boshold, **Blumhardt's Battle** (Thomas E. Lowe Ltd.)

Mark Bubeck, **The Adversary** (Moody Press).

Demon Experiences in Many Lands, Compilation (Moody Press).

Hobart Freeman, **Angels of Light** (Logos).

Robert Frost, **The Overflowing Life** (Logos).

Raphael Gausson, **The Challenging Counterfeit** (Logos).

John Hagee, **Invasion of Demons** (Revell).

Frank Hammonds, **Pigs in The Parlor** (Impact Pub.).

Michael Harper, **Spiritual Warfare** (Logos).

Glenna Henderson, **My Name is Legion** (Bethany).

Donald R. Jacobs, **Demons in the World Today** (Herald Press).

George Johnson & Don Tanner, **The Bible and the Bermuda Triangle** (Logos).

Kurt Koch, **The Devil's Alphabet; Occult Bondage and Deliverance** (Kregel).

Bob Larson, **Hippies, Hinduism and Rock and Roll; Rock and the Church; The Day Music Died; The Guru** (Bob Larson Pub., P.O. Box 26438, Denver, CO 80226).

Frances Manuel, **Though An Host Should Encamp** (Christian Literature Crusade).

Russell Meade, **Handbook on Deliverance** (Creation House).

David Noebel, **The Marxist Minstrels** American College Press, P.O. Box 42, Tulsa, OK 74102).
Robert Pelton, **The Devil and Karen Kingston** (Portals Press and Pocketbook).
Jessie Penn-Lewis, **War on the Saints** (Unabridged) (Thomas E. Lowe, Ltd., Suite 1500, 2 Penn Plaza, NY 10001).
Dr. Merrill Unger, **What Demons Do to the Saints** (Moody Press).
John Weldon & Zola Levitt, **UFO's - What On Earth Is Happening?** (Harvest House).
Maxwell Whyte, **Power of Blood; Kiss of Satan; Exorcism** (Whitaker House).
Win Worley, **Battling the Hosts of Hell - Diary of an Exorcist; Conquering the Hosts of Hell** (H.B.C., Box 626, Lansing, IL 60438).
Dr. John Zollar, **Demons, Their Origin, Work and End** (Christ for Everyone, New Era, MI).
Dr. William Ness, **Transfer of Spirits**

Recommended Reading List
On The World Conspiracy

Gary Allen, **None Dare Call It Conspiracy; The Rockefeller File; The Bankers.** (Whitaker House, Springdale, PA 15144).
John Robinson, **Proofs of a Conspiracy.**
G. Edward Griffin, T**he Capitalist Conspiracy; The Fearful Master.**
John Stormer, **Death of a Nation, None Dare Call It Treason.**
Phyllis Schlafly, **The Gravediggers.**
Dan Smoot, **Invisible Government.**
Wm. Guy Carr, **Pawns in the Game.**
Wm. Cantelon, **The Day the Dollar Dies.**
Lady Queensborough, **Occult Theocracy** (Christian Book Club, Hawthorne, CA 90250).

Nesta Webster, **World Revolution.**
Robert Preston, **Wake Up America, How to Prepare for the Coming Crash.**
W. Cleon Skousen, **Naked Capitalist** (2197 Berkley St., Salt Lake City, Utah 84109).
Phoebe Courtney, **An Expose Nixon and the C.F.R.; Beware Metro and Regional Government; CFR II.**
Pat Brooks, **Return of the Puritans,** (New Puritan Library, P.O. Box 205, Clifton Park, NY 12065).
Des Griffin, **Fourth Reich of the Rich.**

Other books by Pastor Worley:

"Battling the Hosts of Hell - Diary of an Exorcist"
"Conquering the Hosts of Hell - An Open Triumph"

Also cassette tapes and tracts available.
Free lists and prices from:
HBC
P.O. Box 626
Lansing, Illinois 60438